

FROM THE ORGONE AND CANCER RESEARCH LABORATORY

ORGONOTIC PULSATION

The differentiation of the orgone energy from electromagnetism
Presented in talks with an electrophysicist *

By WILHELM REICH, M.D.

INTRODUCTION.

The present article deals with the orgonotic pulsation as a *physical* characteristic of the cosmic orgone energy. The relevant experiments demonstrate orgonotic manifestations in the realm of non-living nature. With that, orgone biophysics takes root in orgone *physics*. The past five years (1939-1944) have shown that the differentiation of the cosmic orgone energy from electromagnetism as commonly thought of was indispensable and fruitful. In the process of this differentiation, a wealth of connections between orgonotic pulsation and problems of biology, geology and astronomy were discovered; they are as yet incalculable, and only a small fraction of them could be organized. I was confronted with the choice of either postponing the publication of the basic facts of orgone physics until such time as all these basic connections are essentially clear, or of delimiting certain problems and of presenting them separately.

In the first case, the presentation of a total picture of the orgone functions would inevitably have been burdened with hypotheses. In the second case, that of piecemeal presentation, the view of the whole is unsatisfactory and often even confusing;

there is, however, the advantage that the details of a special realm of functioning can be more sharply drawn. I chose the second way, also in order to collect more differing and critical points of view before attempting to correlate the various aspects of the orgone function into a whole.

I can understand the impatience of my friends who would like to hear of all that is worth knowing as soon as possible. However, the interest of the total work requires the interpolation of several years between the making of a finding and its publication. This is an automatic safeguard against theoretical blunders. From the very beginning of orgone research it has proven valuable not to publish a new finding until it had already developed into an essential new piece of insight. The continued development to a new insight is a confirmation of the previous finding.

The finding that all substances which have been made to swell show a bionous structure was not published until it had already brought an understanding of the cancer cell. The finding of the visibility of the orgone was not published until after the discovery of the temperature differences. When the findings of thermal and electroscopic organometry were published (1944), the phenomena of orgonotic attraction and repulsion (1942-43)

* Translated from the manuscript by the Editor.

had already been confirmed. At this time, when I submit the phenomena of orgonotic pulsation for publication, there are already at hand new findings and correlations which derive from the study of the pulsation, which confirm and elaborate it.

These things are being said for a good reason: many of my critics are hasty in their judgment. Thus, for example, in the case of the article, "The Discovery of the Orgone" (1942), the objection was made that I should have used this or that method of measurement, that I should have made this or that additional experiment. We do not have to pay any attention to the sarcastic derision with which the first publications on the orgone were met in certain quarters. It is the reaction of impotent people to something alive.

The presentation of the orgonotic pulsation in the realm of non-living nature is in the form of talks with an electrophysicist. He propounds views and objections which, in the course of years, have been propounded by actual physicists. In some places, I have attributed to him typical textbook opinions. In other places, he raises objections which I had to raise myself in the course of the experiments; in still others, he gives explanations as they derive from the orgone experiments. In other words, our electrophysicist is the personification of many real physicists of diverse orientation. This manner of presentation seemed the best to pave the way to a common meeting ground of orgone physics and electrophysics. The erroneous concepts of my electrophysicist are quite common in the world of physics. It goes without saying that they are not mine.

I would like to ask the reader to be indulgent toward minor errors which may be found here and there. If one cuts through a jungle, one is apt to trip over a root and make a blunder. The pioneer in the jungle does not of necessity have to know the exact chemical composition of the leaves. Theoretical physics contains

so many *fundamental* errors that it can ill afford to appear in the role of an *intolerant* critic of a young and pioneeringly fruitful science such as orgone physics.

WILHELM REICH.

April, 1944.

I. THE POSITION OF THE BIOLOGICAL ENERGY IN NATURAL SCIENCE.

Electrophysicist (E): A biologist friend of mine told me very peculiar things about your orgone research. He thinks that your bion experiments may prove of great significance for biology; on the other hand he doubts whether the world of classical biology will ever accept the bion theory.

Orgone biophysicist (O): I share his doubts. Orgone biophysics will gain social recognition at first not in the realm of biology, but in the realms of *biopsychiatry and physics*.

E. I don't understand. After all, with psychiatric problems concerning the nature of the "emotions" as your point of departure, you found a way into the *biological* foundation of psychic processes. One would think, then, that the realm of biology would be the first to acknowledge your findings. Do you understand this resistance on the part of classical biology?

O. This question can be answered in a few sentences: Biology, apart from vitalism, has an essentially *mechanistic* orientation. Orgone biophysics, on the other hand, operates *functionally*, in the experiment, its interpretation, and in the formulation of theories. Classical biology finds itself in a tragic dilemma. On the one hand, it operates with *living* processes which it considers sharply delineated from non-living nature. On the other hand, and simultaneously, it attempts to comprehend the life principle by way of methods and concepts which are taken entirely from physics and chemistry, that is, the sciences concerned with *non-living* nature:

Orgone biophysics finds itself at the opposite pole. It assumes the existence of fluid transitions from the realm of non-living to that of living nature. Second, it dispenses, of necessity, with the mechanistic physical conception of living processes. It demonstrates a specific biological energy which governs all living processes on the basis of simple natural laws. This energy, called orgone, governs living as well as purely mechanical natural processes. The functions of this energy make comprehensible the manner in which living matter develops from non-living matter, that is, the process of biogenesis.

E. It was precisely this aspect of your research which made me look you up. I come to you not for electrophysical but for *biological* interests. I have been studying biology on the side, as one collects stamps or plays golf, in order to get a change from my own professional field.

O. I doubt that your biological interest is no more than an incidental avocation. The biologists, left unsatisfied by their own science, seek respite from dry mechanism in physics and chemistry. For the same reason, many physicists and chemists find their way into the realm of living functioning, if not into mysticism. It is striking to see to what extent Newton was taken up with metaphysical and religious problems; at first glance, this seems amazing in a representative of that "most exact of the natural sciences," mathematics. That which is alive in the genuine scientists always searches for the *basic* elements, for the *common denominator* in the natural laws and natural processes. The living is a significant part of nature. Up to now, it was under the care of mysticism and genuine religiosity. Of course, I am referring here not to the officials of natural science, those who are concerned with knowledge which is already *acknowledged*; they are comparable to museum guards who watch over statues. I am referring to the *genuine researcher*,

the one who strives to get beyond his own limited field, the one who attempts to find the place of his special field in the unitary natural process.

E. Obviously, there has always been a tremendous need for the simplification and unification of the scientific world picture; unfortunately, the efforts in that direction were futile. Rather, the increasing specialization of the various branches of research and their concern with detail work had the opposite effect: that of leading natural science farther and farther away from its real goal, that of simplification and unification of natural processes. The natural philosophers, charged with this task, also soon became specialists: specialists in speculation and in the attempt to solve the riddle of the common denominator in nature by pure thinking. Natural philosophy also failed in this task. The cry for integration of the natural sciences means little as long as the process and the function are not found which comprise all natural processes in their totality as well as in their individual functions.

The specialists of today are poorly trained in methodical thinking. They cannot co-ordinate the details into a whole. It is as if thousands of builders were to build a magnificent structure without having a plan for the whole. Thus the front door does not fit the staircase; there are magnificently furnished rooms lacking an entrance; the water pipe leads into the chimney; the bedrooms are in the lobby and the reception room on the eighth floor. The result is utter confusion. One does not see the woods for all the trees, and one does not see the natural process for all the words. When the tenants moved in, there was war, for—all improvements of modern technic notwithstanding—nobody could find his way around.

O. I usually demonstrate to my pupils and friends the difference between mech-

anistic word-science and functional natural science by way of a very simple illustration.

E. Let's hear it.

O. Take a primitive who enters a modern living room and sees a chair for the first time in his life. What will be his immediate first question? "What do you call this?" or "What do you do with it? What is it made of?"

E. The latter, of course. To begin with, he would not ask about the name, because a word, such as "chair," would not tell him anything about the function or nature of the sitting contraption. To him, "table" or "book" could equally well mean "chair." His biological feeling of motion will soon tell him what one has to *do* in order to "use" this peculiar sitting apparatus. Not until our primitive has established this practical, that is, functioning contact, will he give the contraption a name, such as "leg rest" or "buttocks support."

O. Our classical biologists are not that close to reality. Classical biology has divided and subdivided the realm of the living according to external statistical characteristics and clothed it with a host of difficult words. With that, the primitive sense for *function* and the *origin of function* was so thoroughly lost that the natural functional intelligence underwent complete atrophy. When a biologist sees an energy vesicle which is spherical and takes blue Gram stain he believes to have it satisfactorily explained when he names it "staphylococcus." With that, the avenue of approach to the question, "Where does it come from, what becomes of it, how does it function," is thoroughly blocked.

E. Yes. And since every one of the infinite number of diverse manifestations has its own word, the result is a fantastic confusion.

O. Neurology actually believes to this very day that it has "explained" a motion when it designates the nerve fibres in

which the excitation runs. Among the hundreds of thousands of anatomical names referring to the animal organs there is not one referring to the orgasmic contraction. For all the naming of the various reflexes one overlooked the simple and basic biological functional movements. If any animal were to move according to the description of its body in a mechanistic anatomy, it would be unable to move a limb.

E. I once saw a mental patient in a rigid attitude of defense and made a remark about it to the psychiatrist. He said, "This is the well-known opisthotonus"; the *expression* of the movement, that is, its function, he did not see.

O. It is a pleasure to hear a physicist speak in strictly functional terms. Has not the electronic theory realized the desired unification of the scientific world picture to some extent, after all? Is not the electronic theory of today in harmony with the good old atomic theory of Democritus? To judge from the newspapers and professional publications, everything seems to be pretty well settled.

E. As a professional physicist, I should agree with that; as a living organism, I cannot. To begin with, nobody has as yet seen any electrons. Their existence was *assumed* as a hypothetical working basis. They were assumed in an attempt to comprehend the *common denominator*. Unfortunately, this common denominator soon fell apart into neutrons, protons, electrons, positrons, etc., which are unrelated; one does not know their common denominator. Similarly, the atoms remained invisible.

O. Like the genes of the heredity people.

E. Exactly. Nevertheless, the misbelief in the unchangeability of the chemical elements has been dissipated by the discovery of radium by Madame Curie. But now the substances are built of electrons, positrons, etc. The question of the common denominator has only been shifted

and has become more complicated. In addition, there is magnetism, heat, mechanical energy, etc., the common basis of which is unknown. Since the times of Kepler and Newton one has known the laws of gravitation, but one knows nothing about its nature. The comprehension of the common denominator of the various forms of energy seems farther removed than ever.

O. I don't know enough of practical physics and chemistry to form an opinion here. In biopsychiatry, the mechanistic splitting up of natural science is disturbing. Physics and chemistry have thus far not contributed anything fundamental to the understanding of the vital apparatus, either theoretically or practically. The total functioning of the organism has remained a riddle.

E. People say that, with your orgone physics, you transgress your competence as a psychiatrist. If, as you contend, there is a universal cosmic energy which can be measured and made visible, the physicists should have discovered it long since. You say yourself that you do not know much of practical physics and chemistry, and thus confirm this objection.

O. Let's clarify the question of competence, first of all. It is a matter of the point of view from which competence is judged. I have often asked myself whether I was not going beyond my competence in trying to comprehend orgonotic manifestations in non-living nature. Two considerations contradicted my doubts:

First, it is a fact, one that has been stated by many eminent researchers, that thus far mechanistic natural science has contributed nothing fundamental to an understanding of the simplest life manifestations such as pulsation. Classical biology, tied as it is to the apron strings of inorganic chemistry and physics, deriving its scientific principles from the realm of non-living nature, has also failed. If one judges competence not from pretensions but from *achievements*, then there can be

no doubt that the mechanistic natural sciences have not proved their competence in the realm of the living. This is clearly shown in the sad state of affairs which prevails with regard to medicine and the vital apparatus. People with cancer die a living death of putrefaction. No pathologist, chemist or medical man notices this simple fact. That is, in the question of competence of physics and chemistry with regard to living functioning, the facts decide against them.

Second, *the discovery of the specific biological energy, the orgone, resulted not from a transgression of basic biopsychiatric questions but, on the contrary, from their consistent study.* Quite logically, the discovery of an unconscious psychic life postulated the existence of a "psychic energy." Equally logically, this postulated "psychic energy" had to be thought of as rooted in the biological apparatus. Sex-economy occupied itself for a decade and a half with the vast field of psychic emotions before it made an important biophysical discovery: *The intensity of the sensations of pleasure, of anxiety and of rage, that is, of the three basic emotions of any animal organism, was shown, at the oscillograph, to be functionally identical with the quantity of the biological excitations in the vital apparatus.* This was a deep breach into the obscure mind-body problem. The emotional sensation is not a "result" of the biological excitation, as the mechanists had assumed for thousands of years; nor is it the "cause" of the biological excitation, as the spiritualists had always believed. It is not independent of the excitation, as the dualists believe, nor the "other aspect" of the excitation as the monists contend. The experiment shows that *excitation and sensation are one and the same process in the biological apparatus, for the intensity of a sensation corresponds to the quantity of the excitation, and vice versa.* At the same time, however, a sensation, say, a visual

impression, can produce an excitation, and, conversely, an excitation, say, the touch of a hand, a sensation. Adrenalin in the blood produces anxiety, and anxiety results in increased adrenalin secretion into the blood.

E. You call the relationship of sensation and excitation "functionally identical and antithetical." It is difficult to conceive of a simultaneous identity and antithesis.

O. This is due to the armored human structure which is incapable of thinking *functionally*, that is, in keeping with reality.

E. You will arouse violent objections if you contend that people, as a result of their biopsychic structure, perceive the natural processes in the wrong manner. If you were right, the two prevailing systems of thought, mechanism and metaphysics, would have to be thought of as resulting from the character structure of man during an epoch of some thousands of years. That is hard to swallow.

O. Not any harder than what man had to do when he had to give up his misbelief of two thousand years' standing that the earth was the center of the universe. Then, the teaching of a divine, that is, supernatural, creation of man created the misbelief that man was the center of the world and, with that, the earth was the center of the universe. Similarly, the misbelief that man thinks, independently of his character structure, "in itself logically and correctly," creates the erroneous beliefs of his natural philosophy. Ever since the beginning of written history, human structure has become rigid as a result of authoritarian civilization; for this reason it no longer follows, as does that of the animal, purely biosocial laws. It is not difficult to understand that a biologically rigid organism experiences its own body, and with that its sensations and perceptions, in a different way than a biologically non-rigid organism, say that of a snake.

E. What you mean is this, then: As natural philosophy has always known, sensation is the only portal through which we gain access to the environment and our own organization. If, now, the sensations of the organism are not unitary, if they are blocked or split apart, this state of affairs must be reflected in the perception and the intellectual comprehension of the natural processes. In that case an organism which does not experience its vegetative currents directly and in a unified manner but which, nevertheless, is under their influence, would have to assume mystical, supernatural forces. An organism, on the other hand, which experiences itself as angular and mechanical could produce no other than a mechanistic world picture.

O. Precisely. Functional thinking, on the other hand, corresponds to the natural unitary functioning of the organism. This fact is clearly established by painstaking character-analytic investigations. In schizophrenia, for example, the emotions are perceived as influences coming from without, because the perception of the vegetative currents is blocked from the excitation. The splitting off of excitation and sensation is a basic symptom of this disease and gives it its name. The compulsive character, with his mechanical, angular, unyielding compulsive thoughts, with his dividing into mechanical subdivisions everything he experiences, is the prototype of mechanistic thinking. In reality, mechanical rigidity and mystical experience usually go hand in hand. This is so because the mechanistic splitting up of self-perceptions leaves a void as far as experiencing life is concerned; the mystical experience then makes up—in a pathological manner, of course—for what the rigid, mechanistic thinking does not provide.

E. Can you graphically depict your schema of biopsychic functioning?

O. This is what it looks like:

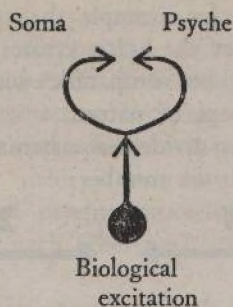


FIG. 1. Schema of biopsychic functioning.

As you see, this schema comprises the unity as well as the antithesis of the biopsychic apparatus. What functions antithetically at the surface is identical in the depth. This schema has proven a safe guide in the most difficult observations and formulations of natural science.

E. I would like to test it on a simple example from the realm of the non-living. It does apply to magnetism: the north pole and the south pole of a magnet are antithetical. In the function of magnetic attraction they are identical. Now, if we try to describe magnetism by way of the methods refuted by you, we would have to say, "The quality of the north pole determines the quality of the south pole." This is obvious nonsense, as is the converse. Or, "The quality of the north pole and that of the south pole are one and the same thing." This is incorrect, for north pole and north pole repulse each other, while north pole and south pole attract each other. "North pole and south pole function in a parallel manner" would be equally wrong.

O. Try it with an example from chemistry.

E. Sodium ions and chlorine ions are functionally antithetical, but they do not "cause" or "determine" each other. Sodium goes to the cathode, chlorine to the anode; they have a positive and negative charge, respectively. But they attract each other chemically and form the neutral compound NaCl. In this, the two antithetical functions are united, forming a new and

different functional unit, NaCl. Your scheme applies here as well as for any other chemical compound.

O. Test it on more general natural processes.

E. Your formula applies to the whole realm of nature: Living matter is sharply distinguished from non-living matter and often antithetical to it. At the same time it has basic factors in common with non-living nature, such as the basic chemical and physical processes.

O. The simultaneous identity and antithesis of living and non-living matter is most easily demonstrated in the orgone-biophysical formula of living functioning. It is the basic formula of biological pulsation: MECHANICAL TENSION \rightarrow ENERGY CHARGE \rightarrow ENERGY DISCHARGE \rightarrow MECHANICAL RELAXATION. It applies to the pulsation of the heart as well as the motion of the worm or the contraction of the vorticella.

E. I see: Tension and relaxation, charge and discharge are also found in non-living nature. To that extent, living nature and non-living nature are functionally identical. The antithesis consists in the fact that these physical functions occur in living nature in a *four-beat combination* which is specific of life and does not occur in non-living nature. That's amazing.

O. Now try to apply the mechanistic or the vitalistic method of thought to this.

E. . . . "The non-living determines the living." Correct. But, on the other hand, life also turns again into the non-living. This fact is left out of consideration in the concept of a one-sided determination of the living from the non-living . . . Spiritualism postulates the dependence of the non-living from the living. Correct, for living matter turns into non-living matter. But here the opposite direction of the process is left out. . . What about the dualistic theory? "Life and non-life are two different, independent, parallel natural processes." This is obviously erro-

neous . . . Now as to monism: "Life is identical with non-life." This, too, is obviously one-sided and therefore erroneous. Your formula, better than anything else, reflects reality: Living matter is identical with non-living matter and at the same time antithetical.

O. Our formula of living functioning solves the age-old feud between the mechanists and the vitalists. Living matter follows, indeed, the same natural laws as non-living matter, as is assumed by the mechanists and materialists. But at the same time there is, as the vitalists contend, a fundamental difference between living and non-living matter. The functional identity between life and non-life consists in the fact that it is *one and the same energy which governs both realms*. Living matter is different in that it functions according to the four-beat of TENSION → CHARGE → DISCHARGE → RELAXATION, which four-beat does not exist in non-living nature.

E. You are supposed to have said somewhere that any concept, including the metaphysical one, has some basis in reality somehow. Does that mean that the diverse theories concerning nature are concerned, in each case, with different aspects or functions of the same natural process?

O. I once set out to combine into one whole the diverse and contradictory methods of thought in our basic schema of functioning.

E. But that is impossible. For if the diverse methods of thinking deal, in each case, only with individual functions, they cannot possibly be united in a schema of thought which proves these diverse methods to be one-sided or incorrect.

O. Yet, it *is* possible. One must even assume that the organisms which observed and described the natural processes—in spite of oneness and incorrectness—nevertheless hit upon parts of the real facts which are contained in our functional schema.

E. Now, for example the spiritualistic concept that the spirit creates the body can hardly be compatible with a functional concept of nature.

O. Let us divide our schema into divisions which we number:

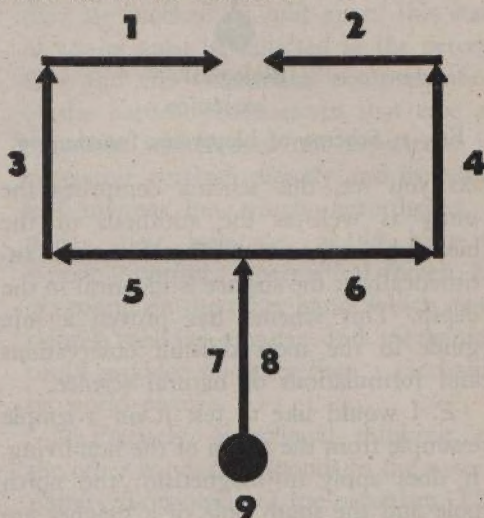


FIG. 2. Diagram of energetic functionalism comprising mechanistic, vitalistic, parallelistic, mystical-theological and monistic natural philosophies.

- 1 → 2 Mechanistic materialism
- 2 → 1 Idealism, vitalism
- 3 ↑ 4 Psychophysical parallelism, dualism
- 5 ← 6 Theism, mysticism
- 7 ↑ 8 Monism, psychophysical identity
- 9 The "common denominator of nature," the cosmic energy, orgone (mystically: "God"; physically: "ether").

Now, if we consider the constituent parts of the schema separately, we find the following:

At the surface, at 1 and 2, there is an *absolute antithesis of psyche and soma*. This is the realm of the mechanists who derive psychic functioning one-sidedly from chemico-physics; it is also the realm of the vitalists who, conversely, believe that the vital energy creates and determines the soma. "The soma determines the sensation," say the mechanists; "the sensations (the entelechy) determine matter,"

say the vitalists. It all depends on whether your point of departure is 1 or 2.

3 and 4 run parallel, and—considered apart from the rest of the diagram—without any connection between each other. These lines correspond to the parallelistic mind-body theory, according to which somatic and psychic processes are independent of each other and run a parallel course.

5 and 6 run *apart* from each other. They correspond to that concept which contends that matter and spirit, soma and psyche, instinct and morals, nature and culture, sexuality and work, earthly and divine things are incompatible; more than that, that they are antithetical. They represent the thinking of every kind of mysticism.

At 7 and 8 there is only *one* line of direction, which can be viewed either from the left or the right side. It corresponds to the concept of monism, of psychophysical identity, according to which psychic and somatic are merely different aspects of the same thing. We must admit that the monists, in their thinking, came closer to the truth than the mechanists, vitalists, dualists and others. They have come very close to the common origin of all other functions. But they overlooked the *antitheses* which result from the splitting up of the unitary, as for instance that of nature into living and non-living matter, animals and plants, or that of the organism into autonomous organs. In overlooking the antithesis, they also overlook the mutual interdependence of the somatic and the psychic.

Our functional schema, on the other hand, takes into consideration the many autonomous functions of a *functional unit*. According to this concept, the various functions derive from a common source (9); in a certain realm, different functions are identical (7, 8); in a different realm, they are divergent (5, 6); or they run parallel, independent of each other (3, 4); or, finally, they are convergent,

that is, attract or influence each other on the principle of antithesis (1, 2).

To illustrate in concrete terms: The animal organism derives from a single unitary cell which is equipped with the function of orgonotic expansion and contraction (9). From this unitary cell develops, on the basis of the function of tension and charge, the somatic as well as the psychic function of what is going to be the complicated total organism, in a *unitary* branch (7/8) which manifests as yet no differentiation into independent psychic and somatic functions.

Then we see a differentiation taking place: the somatic functions develop by themselves, forming, in the course of embryonic development, the various independent organs. In this period, the emotional functions are not developed beyond the primitive stage of pleasure and unpleasure perceptions. At birth, soma and psyche already form *two branches* of a unitary apparatus (5, 6), the organ functions on the one hand and the pleasure-unpleasure functions on the other. The bio-energetic branch which they have in common (7/8) continues to exist.

From this point on, the two developments run independently of each other, i.e., "parallel" (3, 4), at the same time influencing each other. The various body organs have been formed and continue to grow. Independently of this, the pleasure-unpleasure function branches off into the three basic emotions of pleasure, anxiety and rage, and the various functions of perception. The development and differentiation of the function of perception is autonomous, independent of the growth of the organs. Nevertheless, both series of development are provided with biological energy from the *common* branch (9 and 7/8) in the form of the autonomic nervous system. For the growth of the organs as well as the development of the emotions depends on the total function of the autonomic life apparatus.

During the first few months of post-natal life, one can observe how the organ functions (movements of eyes, arms, legs; grasping, sitting up, etc.) become co-ordinated with each other into a totality, while, on the other hand, the pleasure, anxiety and rage reactions also become more detailed, more co-ordinated and more unified. Then follows, step by step, the contact between organ *movement* and organ *perception*, the reaction of the organs to perceptions and the reaction of perception to organ movements. With the co-ordination of individual, as yet purposeless movements into purposeful total body movement; with the co-ordination of individual sensations into the perception of the total body; and with the co-ordination of total body impulse with body perception, that gradually develops which we call *consciousness*. The innumerable individual functions continue to operate independently, but at the same time they form a unitary whole and influence each other synergistically and antagonistically (1, 2). With the function, say, of walking, the "goal" of locomotion develops, e.g., that of reaching a table. *The function determines the goal*, not—as the vitalists believe—the goal the function. But the function also determines the chemico-physical processes, and not vice versa as the mechanists believe. Such is the functionalism in biological reality which guides our thinking. The more exact our observations, the more fluid and differentiating but at the same time more comprehensive and unitary are our deductions.

The functional nature of our thinking is shown in the fact that it recognizes antitheses and identities alongside with other functions. It is not rigid; it recognizes transitions; it follows, nevertheless, definite laws. The mechanistic splitting up of an all-embracing, unitary natural function into single functions, on the other hand, results inevitably in rigidity since it does not allow for the fact that the same

process may have different functions at one and the same time.

E. What you have shown here is indeed far from being just a play with lines. Since it leaves room for differentiation, the common denominator and antithesis at one and the same time, it really is a true reflection of reality. Man and woman have a common origin and common interests. They have a sexually antithetical anatomy, their interests may be different and yet run parallel, and in spite of any antithesis they can attract each other and melt into each other. How did you come upon this methodological schema of thought?

O. Biophysical thinking, comparing and differentiating is guided by the functions of the organism. The organism presents a marvelous picture of unity and differentiation. It forms a functional unity and totality. All its organs derive from one tiny undifferentiated germ cell. What is unitary and undifferentiated splits up into diverse organs with a different function and construction. The action of the heart has in itself nothing to do with the function of hearing, the contraction of the biceps nothing with gastric secretion. Nevertheless, in spite of all the autonomy of the various organs, the organism presents the perfect picture of harmonious unity, order and co-operation, in short, that of biological self-regulation. If, now, you arrange the various functions of the organism in a schema, beginning from the common denominator and from the simple functions, progressing to the complicated and antithetical, you arrive at our schema of functional thinking.

E. I begin to see why you should have such difficulties in coming to an understanding with other sciences. This methodology of thought is new. It is manysided. The usual methods of thinking are one-sided. In your methodology, the functions show fluid transitions and yet are shown to follow definite laws. The customary

thinking establishes more or less rigid limits, allowing of no such transitions.

O. You are right. Our functional method had to be developed in the study of the psychic and somatic functions before the orgone could be discovered. To come back to the question of competence: Does it not seem logical now that the discovery of the biological energy took place not in the realm of chemistry or physics, but in the realm of biopsychiatry? The guiding principle was not the functioning of the Diesel engine, but the *pulsation* of the heart, of a vacuole or a protozoon; not the chemical compound, but sexual attraction; not the Xray, but emotional excitation; not the flight of an airplane, but the flight of a bird or the motions of a fish, not the motion of an engine piston, but orgasmic contraction or the contraction of growth in the embryo. In brief, it was *the functional manifestations of living matter, and not the mechanical ones of non-living matter, which brought sex-economy on the tracks leading to the orgone energy*. The manifestations of life revealed the energy which governs them for the simple reason that sex-economic research did not borrow anything from the realm of the non-living; rather, it learned to deduce the nature of living movement, and, with that, the nature of the biological energy, from direct observation. In the course of the past decade, many physicists tried to follow. Many of them failed, for the simple reason that they were incapable of giving themselves over to the process of their perceptions and sensations and incapable of simply relinquishing an orientation by non-living processes.

E. It would be peculiar if a New Yorker, coming to Stockholm, were to try to orient himself by a map of New York.

O. I wonder whether you will be as easily convinced if we enter, in a practical way, the field of perception and its interpretation. I am afraid that there we will

find ourselves taken not from one city to another city, but to a dense jungle which has no resemblance to a place of habitation at all, where streets and houses still have to be built.

E. It is easier to follow where it is a matter of theoretical principle than where it is a matter of practical work. The joy in hearing, over the radio, of a military victory, has little in common with the emotions experienced in the actual winning of the victory. Things are easier for the spectator than the actor.

O. As a hardworking natural scientist, one experiences idle praise as almost as painful as the carping criticism of the uninitiated passer-by. The functional method of research requires a manysided knowledge of basic facts and the ability to relate isolated facts with each other. This is why it is so difficult to come to an understanding with the specialists who think and work mechanistically. In addition, functional research presupposes a knowledge and mastery of one's own character structure and that of others. This is so because every perception and sensation is tinged by the character structure. Orgasm research required this self-control to a particularly high degree, since it has connections with all fundamental branches of research in natural science. Orgasm research grew out of psychiatric work, took roots in sexual biology, pushed on to the emotions and with that to the biophysiology of excitation. With that, however, at first without having an inkling of it, it entered the realm of the cosmic energy.

E. To one not intimately acquainted with these problems it would seem peculiar that a new branch of physics should have developed from sexological research. I think you should no longer speak of sex-economy and orgasm theory, but of orgone physics and orgone biophysics. This would make your theory to be much more readily accepted.

O. And would make a new field of

knowledge to be soon obliterated. I well know people's reactions to the terms of sex-economy and orgasm. They evoke pornographic ideas. For that, however, not sex-economy is to be blamed, but the character structure of the people who react in this manner. These reactions are painful and create ridiculous as well as dangerous situations. But should one give in to such manifestations of the emotional plague, this universal disease which finds itself confronted for the first time by a deliberate medical opponent, namely, sex-economy? No, we must continue to adhere to the terms and concepts of sex-economy for more than historical reasons. Without sex-economy and orgasm research, the orgone would not have been discovered. However, orgasm research has more than a historical significance for orgone research. People and concepts come and go. They are like accidental passengers on an express train; the passengers stay on for a short stretch and disappear again; the express train, however, continues across the continent. Compare the function of a human prejudice with the function of the living! The human prejudice which impedes orgasm research is at most 4000 years old. The orgasm function, however, is timeless. Besides respiration, it is the basic function of the living, as expressed in the orgasmic longing—conscious or unconscious—of man and animals. It is not due to this natural process that the animal, man, deteriorated pornographically. Besides, the pornographic prejudice is not being cultivated by the human species but by some relatively few miscarried individuals; by these, it is true, it is done, unfortunately, with great and devastating success, for there is as yet no penal law against the defamation of nature by individuals suffering from the emotional plague. The most immediate practical function of orgasm research is precisely that of doing away with pornography. Beyond that, it will always remain the core of

orgone research. I did not make it that way; it is so whether we want it or not.

E. You are right. There is no researcher or artist of any account whose work did not in one way or another grow out of the sexual process.

In your presentation of the function of the orgasm you speak of bio-electricity. The orgasm makes the living being part of the general process of nature. Are you still of the opinion that the animal organism is part of the general *electrical* process of nature?

O. Before the orgone energy was discovered and made an object of study, there was no other way than to assume electrical energy processes at the basis of the orgasm function. This being so, the interpretation of the processes ran, again and again, into unsolvable contradictions. For example, emotional excitation was expressed in potential differences of millivolts. This extremely small magnitude of the electrical reaction did not fit the gigantic forces at work in an organism. It is impossible to define an organism, with its unitary function, in terms of bipolarity, that is, in terms of positive and negative electricity. Nor is it possible to equate the polarity of the sexes with electrical polarity, to assume, for example, the man to be positively charged and the woman negatively. Besides, the slow, wave-like forms of motion of living tissues are at variance with the rapid, angular motions of electricity. In other words, there were, even before the discovery of the orgone, considerable difficulties in applying electrical concepts in the realm of the living. The gradual exploration of the orgone settled this question by demonstrating beyond any doubt the *non-electrical* nature of the orgone. True, electrical stimuli result in sensations, but these sensations are alien to the organism, they have a disturbing effect and are at variance with organic sensations. Incidentally, physiology has not yet succeeded in reducing the

specific biological reactions to electrical processes. It did not get any farther than the application of electrical stimuli and the study of the action currents. But between stimulus and action current there is a third link, the specific biological reaction. This, however, is independent of the stimulus as well as the action current. It functions without stimulus also; in addition, the kind of the reaction is specific and has nothing to do with the electrical stimulus. The same electrical stimulus produces a different reaction in a skeletal muscle, a heart muscle, or a smooth muscle. True, the electrical stimulus can bring about a biological reaction, a contraction; but the energy of the contraction is something different from the energy of the stimulus.

E. Do you take the basis of the biological reaction to be a "spirit," an "entelechy"? It seems to me that this basic question should be dealt with first of all. Not only the theists and mysticists, but prominent natural scientists assumed a general "animism" of nature, including non-living nature. This concept of nature, beginning with the "soul atoms" of Democritus, persisted over more than 2000 years in the diverse forms of natural-scientific idealism; we find it in the "crystal soul" of Haeckel, the "categorical imperative" of Kant, etc. Correctly thinking materialists always postulated a "perceiving matter"; this seems to be the greatest riddle of all research in natural science, if one excludes the metaphysical, absolute universal spirit. Very likely, the perceiving plasma of the animal, man, has misinterpreted the cosmic energy in terms of an absolute universal spirit. Unfortunately, man made out this universal spirit as unknowable and invested it with banal human characteristics, such as a beard.—Where do you put the boundary line between life and non-life?

O. It is not long since a "soul" and "perception" was ascribed only to man as

distinguished from the other animals. From the biophysical point of view, no line of demarcation can be found in the realm of the living at which perception is added to pulsation. If we draw the consequences from our bio-electrical experiments, according to which the quantity of a biological excitation is identical with the intensity of the perception of pleasure or unpleasure, then *biological excitation and psychic perception are functionally identical*. That is, *perception is present with the very first plasmatic expansion and contraction*. On the other hand, there is no sufficient reason for the assumption that non-contraction, that is, non-living matter, perceives. The assumption of a general "spirit" of nature, including non-living nature, is not a sound one, then. At the present state of our knowledge of perceptions and general biophysics we do better to separate the living from the non-living; the living being that which is characterized by *pulsation* (alternating expansion and contraction) and *perception*, the non-living that which is rigid and without perception. *Where there is no pulsation, there also is no perception*.

E. If the orgone energy functions in both realms of nature, and if the orgone is connected with the characteristics of life, then I see no way of excluding perception in the realm of the non-living.

O. There are some experiments which show that pulsation, that is, alternating expansion and contraction, is an imminent basic function of the orgone energy. The orgone shows a pulsatory function in rigid substances also. This finding supports your argument. But mysticism would immediately make capital of such a gap in natural science and contend that natural science, had confirmed the existence of the universal spirit. Living matter differs from non-living matter in that it is capable of *participating* in the orgonotic pulsation; non-living matter,

due to its rigidity, is incapable of participating in the organotic pulsation.

E. In other words, we can speak of living matter only if the cosmic *orgone energy functions in matter capable of contraction, if the organotic pulsation produces an actual pulsation in it.*

O. Precisely. It is a matter of the *pulsatory changes in form* which occurs in matter. It is these changes of form which determine the fundamental biological functions, such as growth, division, procreation, metabolism, pleasure and anxiety. This one does not really comprehend until one has first observed the pulsation in rigid matter, that is, matter *incapable of change of form*. Thus one convinces oneself that there are *two kinds of pulsation*, energy pulsation and material pulsation. *Material pulsation and energy pulsation must coincide, must be synchronous, in order to produce life processes.*

E. Did you succeed in observing the transition of matter from a rigid state to a pulsatory state directly?

O. The study of this transition is the most important aspect of microscopic bion research. The becoming plasmatic of previously non-plasmatic matter, in other words, the appearance of the capacity of pulsation in previously rigid matter, can be observed directly.

E. You mean to say you observed movements of contraction and expansion in previously rigid substances?

O. Yes. But such observation is not possible at a magnification of less than 3000x. This direct observation shows beyond any doubt that what causes the movement is *inner impulses* and not external mechanical impulses which the mechanist ascribes to the molecules and calls "Brownian movement."

E. One should think it's obvious that Brownian movement can result only in a movement from place to place and that it cannot explain *inner motility*.

O. This has already been admitted by some biologists.

E. Movement without energy is inconceivable. Since we must exclude the presence of external impulses, the inner motility can be ascribed only to an energy which develops in and from the matter itself.

O. It cannot possibly be otherwise.

E. How do you bring about the transition from rigidity to inner motility?

O. By making matter swell. This can be done simply by putting it in water. Depending on its hardness and density, it will take more or less time until the first manifestations of inner motility appear. In order to shorten the process, we add substances which promote the process of swelling, such as potassium chloride, and heat the solutions in the autoclave to 120°C. In doing so, we reproduce a process which continually goes on in nature. After a long spring rain, for example, one finds vividly pulsating bions in the soil. Very hard or rigid substances such as rock or coal have to be "smashed" by heating them to incandescence before being exposed to the process of swelling.

E. How does the bion differ from its substance of origin?

O. First of all, structurally. For example, a coal particle, a rock particle or a particle of iron filing shows a smooth or striated structure. After having been made to swell, however, the same substances show, particularly in the dark-field, a vesicular structure. The vesicles detach themselves. If viewed at a magnification of 3-5000x, with apochromatic lenses, their content appears blue or blue-green. The substances of origin, however, show their own color: coal appears black, iron blackish brown, etc. Every substance which has been made to swell and every living substance shows these two characteristics: *bionous, vesicular structure* and *blue or blue-green content*.

E. At what stage do the pulsatory movements occur?

O. *When the membrane of the bion has become thin enough to yield to the impulse to expansion and contraction from the inside.*

E. I would like to limit myself to the physical manifestations and suggest that we postpone discussion of the biophysical manifestations until we have understood the orgone functions in the realm of the non-living.

O. Fine.

E. Do you find that the particles exert any influence *at a distance*, and are there any differences in this respect between the bions and the substances of origin?

O. The non-living substances of origin show no inner motility, the bionous substances do. This indicates the mobilization of attractive and repulsive forces in the process of swelling. The rigid substances of origin have no influence on bacteria which are placed in their proximity. The heaps of bionous matter, however, attract and paralyze them. This effect is the more marked the more mobile and the more strongly radiating the bions are.

E. You say "more strongly radiating." How do you determine this?

O. Bionous matter refracts light more strongly than does non-bionous matter. Microscopically and photographically, it shows a strongly refracting "margin" around the membrane. This radiating margin appears with the bionous disintegration of matter and disappears when the bion dies, that is, becomes immobile or degenerates into T-bacilli. T-bacilli, or, to put it differently, particles with a weak orgone charge, show no radiating margin; blood platelets do not show it. The radiating margin, then, is certainly not a phenomenon of refraction.

E. You assume a connection between orgone and light. What have you found out about that experimentally?

O. Nothing really, up to now. The connection is still obscure. We have experimented with photographic plates for the past five years, without reaching a satisfactory conclusion.

E. Are photographic plates influenced by the orgone?

O. We have incontrovertible proof that the orgone affects the photographic emulsion. However, the results obtained in different experiments are so contradictory and so unusual from the standpoint of customary radiation photography that they are as yet inconclusive. For this reason, we are not yet publishing the results obtained thus far.

E. After all, in a research field as new as yours, nobody will ask to see everything settled at once. Does the orgone influence the photographic plate like light or like another kind of electromagnetic energy? Does it *blacken* the plate?

O. According to observations to date, the atmospheric orgone consists of *three* different forms of energy. I shall not tell you about them yet, because I would like you to see them for yourself. Since the orgone penetrates everything and for that reason it has not been possible to delimit it, it was also not possible to separate the three different forms from each other. If one exposes photographic plates in the dark to concentrated orgone, one obtains doubtless results which correspond to a light influence. If, however, one exposes plates to concentrated orgone *and* light, simultaneously or successively, one finds that those parts of the emulsion which were influenced by the orgone no longer react to the light influence. It seems, then, that the orgone acts at one and the same time like light *and antithetically* to it: On the one hand, it blackens photographic plates, and on the other hand it prevents or reduces the blackening by light.

E. That sounds peculiar. The prevention or reduction of the light effect by some energy is something basically new.

But now I would like to see the orgone energy.

O. That will not be difficult. We sit down in this completely dark orgone accumulator. It consists of a double layer of organic and metallic material. From the outside to the inside, it consists of a layer of celotex, then a layer of sheet iron, then again a layer of celotex and another layer of sheet iron. We shall have to adapt our eyes to the darkness for about half an hour. Then, will you describe your observations?

E. All right. I am very curious and believe in direct observation. In physics, unfortunately, we cannot directly observe the flight of energy particles; all we can do is to photograph it. But that is not the same thing. We are forced to form hypothetical concepts concerning the motion of the electrons, without being able to observe them. We can only deduce their motion but cannot see it. The motion of the energy particles is too rapid for our eye and is in itself not perceptible except by way of fluorescent substances or the photographic plate.

O. In observing the orgone, we have the great advantage that the motion of the particles is *very slow* compared with the speed of electromagnetic energy . . . Keep watching a definite spot on the metal wall of the accumulator. You will have to wait until you really can see the phenomena.

E. I find that the room is not absolutely black, but as if filled with a dim diffuse light. It is of a *bluish-gray* color. It also seems that there are small bluish dots flying by. But I can't be sure, because when I close my eyes, they continue to be there.

O. Since the orgone is present everywhere, you have it in your eyes just as you have it outside, at the wall of the accumulator. This is one of the difficulties inherent in these observations. The

orgone also irritates the optic nerve and produces after-images.

E. Now it becomes more distinct. I see small blue sparks fly toward me and past me. They seem to come out of the walls, at rhythmical intervals which have nothing to do with my pulse rate . . . As the dots move toward me, they seem slowly to contract and expand. When flying by sideways, they take a trajectory similar to a parabola. This trajectory is interrupted by loop-like forms; it is as if the dots, at certain points of the trajectory, would begin to fly in the opposite direction, thus forming a loop.

O. Can you tell whether the distances between the loops are uneven or about even?

E. They seem to be about even.

O. We shall draw the form of the trajectory sometime and discuss it. For the time being, just get acquainted with it . . . In the corner of this large orgone accumulator is a small one consisting of three layers each of organic and metallic material and measuring 1 cubic foot. It contains a small frosted bulb such as are used in the development of highly sensitive photographic films. In the front wall there is an opening measuring 4 square inches, containing a cellulose disc with a dull surface on the inside. In its stead, one also could use a fluorescent screen such as is used in X-ray fluoroscopy. I now turn on the green bulb.

E. . . . I see some sort of movement at the disc; as if vapors moved over it. It is like a vivid flickering . . . Why, this is amazing! You have turned on a dark green electrical bulb which gives a steady dim light. But what I see, in addition to the flickering, is not green, but *blue-violet* light!

O. This is the specific color of the orgone. Can you distinguish details?

E. . . . My eyes are somewhat blinded.

O. This cannot be due to the green

light, for the eyes rest in the dark and are not irritated by dim green light.

E. It is as if the opening became alternately lighter and darker. At times the impression of light seems to disappear altogether. Other times it looks as if luminous vapors came through the opening as if in individual impulses.

O. Here is a magnifying glass with a magnification of 5x. Focus it on the disc.

E. . . . I see yellowish-white rays which move very rapidly in all directions. It looks like miniature fireworks.

O. In other words, you have now seen the three different energy forms of the orgone: blue-gray vapors, blue-violet dots which float slowly and form loops at regular intervals, and, finally, rapid, straight, yellowish rays.

E. There can be no doubt about it. It is remarkable that you should not yet have succeeded in photographing this intensive energy in an unmistakable manner. Doubtless, it has some connection with light, for the light dots were far less distinct in the dark than they are now against the background of the steady, dim green light. It is as if the dim light produced a stronger radiation in the particles. A most peculiar thing!

O. Instead of the green light, I shall now turn on a dim *red* bulb such as is used in dark rooms.

E. . . . There are, against the dim red light at the disc, violet patches, definitely. You did not turn on a violet bulb, did you?

O. No, but red plus blue gives violet. This goes only to show again that there is, in the atmosphere, a blue energy.

E. The longer I look, the more distinct become the trajectories. There can be no doubt: the trajectory continues, in a rhythmical manner, to turn back on itself, and the little dots become alternately bigger and smaller. What do you think about it? What does it have to do with the nature of light?

O. Let's turn on the light and discuss this question another time.

E. The facts can no longer be doubted, though they are very difficult to comprehend. Radiating energy points which move very slowly and seem to float! . . . My eyes hurt.

O. We shall get some fresh air. The air in the orgone accumulator is heavy. And we have been sitting in it for an hour and a half.

E. I should like to think this experience over. Could we continue our discussion in a couple of days?

O. I shall look forward to it.

II. THE ORGONOTIC EXCITATION OF INSULATORS. QUESTIONABLE POINTS IN THE CONCEPT OF STATIC ELECTRICITY.

O. You have convinced yourself of the existence of visible energy particles in the atmosphere. I termed this energy "orgone," at first in order to distinguish it, for the purposes of investigation, from all other, known phenomena of radiation. We have good reasons for the assumption that the functions of this energy cannot be subsumed under the concept of "electricity." My observations force me to assume that what is commonly called electricity is only a special function of the orgone energy.

E. That is a very radical conclusion. One cannot simply introduce a new concept of energy and thus reduce to insignificance an old concept worked out by thousands of researchers. But I shall listen to your arguments.

O. Before giving them, let us find out whether there is, in the world of physics, any kind of consensus of opinion concerning the basic principles of electrics. Is there an awareness of fundamental gaps in the understanding of electromagnetism?

E. Indeed there is. There are plenty of contradictions. Quite a number of promi-

nent physicists doubt the correctness of the prevalent concepts of so-called "static electricity."

O. How would you briefly formulate these doubts?

E. Modern physics in general has progressed to functional formulations of energy. The concepts of "matter" and "energy" are no longer rigid; they no longer denote sharply delineated fields but, rather, a functional condition, a condition which allows of transition. No longer is "energy" thought of as attached to "matter"; rather, matter is considered extremely slowed down energy which has become rigid, while energy is considered matter dissolved and extremely speeded up. Compared with such functional concepts in modern physics, the concept of the two "electrical fluids" which supposedly explain the phenomena of the static electroscope is unsatisfactory.

O. The findings of orgone biophysics absolutely fit the *functional* concept of the relationship between matter and energy. On the other hand, they are at variance with the concept of two separate electrical fluids, positive and negative electricity. This old theory is a reflection of mechanistic thinking which splits things up. This thinking not only made an absolute distinction between "matter" and "energy"; it even split up the electrical energy into two independent "fluids."

E. For that, the old scientific pioneers should not be blamed. After all, this concept was in accord with a number of phenomena of friction electricity. A rubber rod, when rubbed, shows an energy which indeed has the opposite electroscopic effect from the energy shown at a rubbed glass rod. If one deflects the electroscope leaf with a rubbed rubber rod, a second rubbed rubber rod will increase the deflection, while a rubbed glass rod will decrease it. This confirms the concept of the two separate electrical fluids.

O. I have carried out the old experiments with this kind of electricity many times and can confirm them. But in doing so I have made two observations which are at variance with the theory.

E. New observations may still be understood in terms of the old theory. Only if this is absolutely impossible; only when a new concept brings more facts into a simple unit than the old theory, and does it in a better way; only then has it a right to replace the old theory. Experimental physics is rightly strict in judging new theories, if for no other reason, to avoid chaos. What are the observations which are at variance with the theory?

O. I continued the experiments with rubber electricity and glass electricity in the following manner: Instead of rubbing the glass rod on dead felt, I rubbed it on the *hair* of my head. The electroscope was charged with an energized rubber rod. According to your mechanistic theory of friction, there should be no difference between the dead felt and my hair: friction is friction. Consequently, the glass rod which was energized at my hair should *decrease* the opposite charge of the electroscope. In reality, it *increases* the charge; that is, it has the same sign as the rubbed rubber rod. This contradicts the assumption of a specific glass electricity. It would be senseless to assume that the glass rod becomes energized like the rubber rod if rubbed at the hair, and like a glass rod if rubbed at the felt. It is conceivable, however, that the process taking place between glass rod and hair is a different one from that taking place between glass rod and dead felt. This phenomenon is incompatible with the mechanistic concept of electrical excitation by friction. My observations of the orgone manifestations explain the contradiction. The hypothesis of the two specific electrical fluids fails us here.

E. Not yet. There is the possibility that

the glass rod takes up negative electricity from the hair, while it may itself become excited, that is, react positively, at the felt which is much rougher than the hair.

O. I raised this objection myself. Another experiment answers your argument. If you were right, then the friction at the felt—*independent of the sign of the excitation of the glass rod*—would have to result in the same deflection of the electroscope as the identical friction at the hair.

E. Yes, if one considers the identical amount of mechanical friction to be the cause of the phenomenon. What does the experiment show?

O. I stroke the glass rod lightly over the hair of my head, just once. The electroscope leaf deflects to an angle of about 45 degrees. Now we discharge the glass rod with water. We stroke it lightly over the much rougher felt. The leaf deflects only minimally or not at all. That is, the phenomenon is not mechanically determined. *The hair not only energizes the glass rod much more easily than does the felt; it also charges it with a different energy, the same as that of the rubber rod.*

E. There must be a mistake here; that's completely incomprehensible.

O. There is no mistake. I have made this experiment hundreds of times, always with the same result. It is in accord with other observations of the orgone. The phenomenon is incomprehensible only from the point of view of the mechanistic concept of the two separate electrical fluids attached to glass and rubber, respectively.

E. What does the same experiment show when done with the rubber rod?

O. A confirmation. 1. *The excitation by the hair is in the same direction as that by the dead felt.* 2. The excitation by the hair—the manipulation being the same—is incomparably stronger than that by the felt.

E. What is your conclusion from these findings?

O. Only a preliminary one. It is: *So-called "friction electricity" has nothing to do with friction.* Further facts will confirm this assumption.

E. How does your theory explain the fact that, after all, rubber or glass have to be rubbed in order to get a deflection of the electroscope? Apparently, friction is indispensable. You draw off from the hair, that is, use friction.

O. "Drawing off" and "rubbing, using friction" is not the same thing. There are orgonotic phenomena which appear only if one draws off *gently* but not if one rubs strongly. Friction eliminates many reactions which are easily obtained by gentle stroking. More about this another time. The orgone theory answers the question of friction in the following manner: The orgone energy is present *everywhere*. The felt is permeated by it as is the soil or the atmosphere. The felt, however, being a non-living substance, does not of itself radiate energy. It only gives off what it has taken up from the environment or what is released by strong friction. The living hair, on the other hand, radiates orgone by virtue of its living functioning. It is *spontaneously* charged. For this reason, it is very easy to draw off orgone from the hair with a rubber or glass rod. The felt, on the other hand, does not live, that is, does not spontaneously give off orgone. In order to get it, one has to "rub it out" of it.

E. From this it would follow that the concept of "friction electricity" could be replaced by that of *orgonotic excitation*. "Friction electricity," then, would be no more than an uninteresting special case of orgonotic excitation which may be based on passively absorbed orgone or orgone radiated as part of living functioning.

O. That is precisely the conclusion to be drawn from these observations. It does

not become fully convincing, however, until one demonstrates the same electro-scope reactions without friction and without drawing off of energy.

E. This would indeed be incontrovertible proof. But I doubt that it can be done.

O. Yes, it can: Rubber or cellulose, if rubbed on metal, shows no electroscopic reaction, regardless of how we interpret this fact. We take a cellulose disc and make sure that it shows no reaction at the electroscope. We then leave it lying for a few days on the metal wall of an orgone accumulator. Depending on the orgone tension in the accumulator, the cellulose disc will absorb orgone more or less quickly and will show a more or less strong deflection of the electroscope. In making this experiment, one must have patience and not expect the reaction too soon.

E. You should not expect the physicists to go to too much trouble with new experiments. Is there not another method of demonstrating the organotonic excitation without friction and without stroking?

O. Yes, there is. The sun continues to radiate orgone into the atmosphere. Let us put a cellulose plate which is electroscopically indifferent into bright sunlight, possibly in the absence of wind. After about 15 to 30 minutes of exposure to the sunlight the cellulose will show a deflection of the electroscope; the magnitude of the reaction will depend on the intensity of the sun radiation and the relative humidity of the air. It is important to remember that most orgone reactions disappear and cannot be reproduced when the relative humidity is more than about 50%.

E. Thus far you have only shown that so-called "friction electricity" is a special function of the orgone energy. But you have not yet proven your original contention that *orgone is not electricity at all*. What physics calls "electricity" might be a special function of the orgone; it also

might be something basically different. My belief is that orgone is nothing else but negative electricity, pure and simple.

O. This is exactly what was said by a Dutch physicist at the time of the discovery of the orgone in 1939. The orgone in the rubber or the glass rod, taken from the hair, does indeed act like negative static electricity. Since all energy must be reduced to *one* common denominator, it goes without saying that what we call "orgone" and what you call "electricity" must have some connection with each other. But, unfortunately, there are important differences. It would be much more convenient for me if I could express the characteristics of the orgone in well-known terms of electrics, if I could describe them, for example, in terms of electronics. Unfortunately, that is not possible without doing violence to the facts. *The functions of the orgone energy cannot be understood in terms of the known functions of electricity and magnetism.* This forces on the experimenter the necessity of difficult and time-consuming experiments to find out what organotonic functions there are which do not exist in electromagnetism, which, in other words, are *specifically organotonic*; to find out, further, what are the undoubtedly existing connections between orgone and electromagnetism; to prove, finally, that orgone and electricity are not identical. It would be so much simpler if the orgone could be subsumed under electricity. So you see that my contentions do not spring from a desire to be original.

E. I think your undertaking is hopeless. You cannot simply throw over research in electrics of hundreds of years' standing. You cannot adduce all the proofs which would be necessary to prove your contention satisfactorily.

O. It may look that way. But there are gaps in electrics which are bridged by orgone physics; there are a number of observations which are fundamental

enough to encourage the undertaking. If one *must* ascend the Mont Blanc, one cannot let oneself be intimidated by its height and the difficulties of climbing it. Patient climbing will get one a considerable distance; nobody can predict, however, whether or not one will succeed in reaching the summit.

E. Let's hear. We don't expect it to be easy.

O. There is some consolation in the following: In studying physics and in talking with physicists one meets so many erroneous contentions which continue to be made without any criticism that I have resigned myself to the possibility of adding another erroneous contention to the many. That would not matter much. But the possibility of success is too tempting to leave the attempt cowardly alone. In addition, the numerous contradictions in physics are only another incentive.

E. Well, there can be no harm in formulating a new hypothesis.

O. Electricity—to stick to the term for the time being—was discovered, and produced, by the ancient Greeks and later by Gilbert, Cabeo, Guericke, Franklin and others, in *non-metallic* substances. Those substances which produce but do not conduct "electricity" they termed "electrica"; the metallic substances, which conduct but do not produce electricity, they termed "non-electrica." The good old electrical machine was based on the principle of friction between leather and glass; the electric energy was accumulated by way of points and "Leyden jars." Franklin's famous experiments with the lightning conductor were based on this. Have you ever been struck by the fact that this original method of producing electricity has been given up and has been relegated to the museum of history?

E. Frankly, I never gave it any thought. But it is true that, since the days of Volta and Faraday, the principle of producing electricity has become an entirely dif-

ferent one: In industry, electrical energy is produced only by chemical elements or the motion of metal wires in magnetic fields. The generator and the battery have replaced the old electrical machine. That's all. It doesn't strike me as remarkable.

O. But it is. This has not happened by accident. The theory of friction electricity did not lead any further because it became bogged down in the concept of the two separate fluids. Technically, it was a miscarriage. *Practically*, the principle of the two electrical fluids was replaced by the more fruitful principle of the moving electromagnetic energy fields.

E. What about it? You are getting involved.

O. No, I am not. I have to call back from oblivion an extremely important fact, precisely in connection with the question whether orgone is electricity or not. My contention is that the energy with which the ancient Greeks and the moderns since Gilbert were dealing was a basically different energy from that with which the physicists are dealing since Volta and Faraday; different not only with regard to the principle of its production, but *fundamentally* different. In reality, the ancient Greeks, with the principle of friction, had discovered the *orgone*. The *electric* current was not discovered until the times of Volta, Faraday, Coulomb, Ampère, etc.; and they broke completely with that method of energy research followed by the ancient Greeks, and by the moderns to the times of Gilbert and Franklin.

E. Why, that sounds fantastic. I would not even listen any more if I did not know you as conscientious.

O. It is no more fantastic than the overlooking of the atmospheric orgone on the part of the physicists and astronomers.

E. How do you explain the fact that the atmospheric energy was so thoroughly overlooked?

O. There is a psychological or, rather, *biological* explanation which I shall put forth elsewhere. But there is also a purely technical explanation. The men who study the "cosmic rays" have been on the track of the orgone for a long time. The fact that they missed it is due to an erroneous interpretation of electroscopic reactions.

E. You don't say! Can you explain this in a simple manner?

O. Basic facts can always be presented in a simple manner. What is always complicated is the working out of new methods and, even more so, the refutation of prejudiced and erroneous concepts which shroud the simple facts. The phenomenon of overlooking the atmospheric orgone shows this particularly clearly.

E. If you had not given me an incontrovertible visual demonstration of the orgone, I would have refused to follow here.

O. It is just the point at which so many physicists refused to give me credence. One is loath to give up old, well-established concepts. That has always been so. I wonder whether man will ever reach the stage where he is willing to give up the illusion of emotional security which is provided by well-established concepts for the triumph brought by the finding of something new.

E. You overlook the factors of envy and the narrowness of everyday thinking.

O. I have learned to understand this narrowness. It is necessary for a well-ordered functioning of the social machinery and as a protection against human irrationalism. Unfortunately, it blocks the way to decisive insights and, with that, to a real mastery of the difficulties of life.

E. What are your facts? We might postpone the interpretation of the facts until later.

O. I am glad to hear you make a clear-cut distinction between the two. All too commonly, facts are being explained away by concepts without any content. When

I demonstrated the bions to a biologist he brushed them off with the remark that "the Brownian movement was a well-known fact." When I asked him whether the physical Brownian movement, based on "the push of the molecules" could explain the movements of *expansion and contraction* in the bions, he became angry. Let us, to begin with, look at the new facts and try to bring them into harmony with the concepts of electrics. Will you, as an exponent of electrics, give me the current concepts of electric conduction and insulation?

E. This is simple and generally recognized: The good conductor of electricity differs from the insulator or poorly conducting material by the fact that in it the units of electricity, the electrons, are freely mobile; in the good insulator they are immobile.

O. This is in accord with the fact that the electrical energy in a wire which is insulated with rubber does not act beyond the surface of the wire. The rubber does not conduct the electricity to the surface of the wire, that is, it "insulates" it. Now I should like to show you an experiment: We insert a thin polystyrene rod between

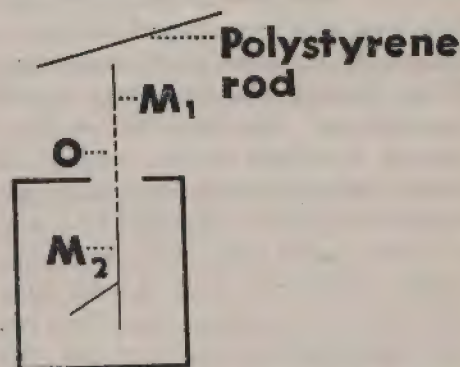


FIG. 3. Demonstration of the conductivity of organic substances for orgone.

the metal knob of this electroscope and the metal rod to which the leaf is attached. That is, we have inserted an "insulation" between the knob and the leaf.

According to your theory, no electricity should flow from the knob to the leaf. The experiment contradicts this contention: If we hold a polystyrene rod which has been charged from the hair at a distance of about 1 cm. from the knob, we get the same deflection of the electroscope as with direct metallic conduction. The only difference is that with the insulator in between the deflection occurs somewhat more slowly. At any rate, *the insulator did conduct "electricity."*

E. You must have chosen a poor insulator.

O. The better the insulator, the more marked the reaction. Polystyrene is known as an excellent insulator. It always gives the reaction.

E. This is amazing. I have never heard about this experiment.

O. It is amazing only from the standpoint of the concept that in the insulator the electrical units are immobile. From the standpoint of the orgone theory the phenomenon is not amazing at all. The energy which I draw off from my hair is not electricity but orgone energy which is capable of penetrating everything. *The theory of the insulators applies to electricity but not to the orgone.* Orgone is something different from electricity.

E. This one experiment would hardly suffice to prove your contention. A well-trained physicist could explain it in the framework of the concepts of electricity. For example: Have you calibrated your electroscope? Do you know the magnitude of the charge you use?

O. Yes, my electroscope is calibrated. A deflection of 90 degrees corresponds to the deflection obtained with about 1000 volts.

E. I am sorry you fell into the trap. I hope you will prove to be right. For our concept of static electricity is indeed unsatisfactory and contradictory. Our usual electrical wires have an insulation sufficient for 110 to 220 volts. If you put

1000 volts through such a wire it will go through the insulation; that is, the same thing will happen as happened in your insulator here. This fact can be understood in the framework of electrics.

O. You would hardly think that I would make such contentions without thinking of such facts and without adding the proper proofs.

E. There can't be any such proofs.

O. They are as simple as the fact of the existence of a visible energy in the atmosphere, though hitherto it has been overlooked. Please charge the electroscope with your static energy so that the deflection represents a tension of about 1000 volts.

E. Here is the charge. What now?

O. Put a disc of cellulose, a good insulator, the size of about 6x12 inches, on the metal plate of the electroscope. Now touch the insulating disc with your finger.

E. *The electroscope discharges gradually!*

O. A fact which is incomprehensible from the point of view of your electrical fluids, since, according to that view, the insulator has no mobile electrical units

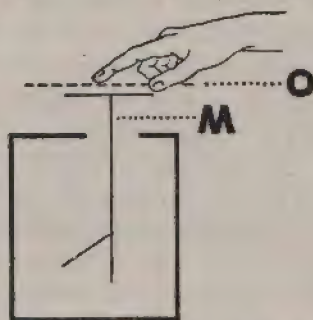


FIG. 4. Discharge of orgone-charged electroscope through an insulator.

and, therefore, cannot conduct electricity. From the standpoint of orgone physics, the phenomenon is easily understandable:

The electroscope is charged not with electricity, but with orgone. The orgone penetrates everything, conductor and non-

conductor, only at different speeds. The insulator does not conduct electricity. But it conducts orgone. This is why you can charge an electroscope with an orgonotically charged insulator just as you can discharge the electroscope through an insulator.

E. You have charged the electroscope with a charge corresponding to about 1000 volts. It must be possible to check your contention that the energy in the electroscope is not electricity. Let us connect a voltmeter with the electroscope. According to our theory, the deflection is due to a tension between the negative electricity at the leaf and the positive electricity at the casing. This must show at the voltmeter.

O. Connect the voltmeter with the electroscope in any way you wish. If the energy in the electroscope is electrical energy; then your voltmeter must react.

E. No matter how I do it, I cannot obtain any reaction at the voltmeter.

O. I know. I have checked this up many times and always obtained a negative result. The voltmeter does not react at all, in spite of the fact that the electroscope contains energy in the amount of about 1000 volts. From the point of view of electrics, this is incomprehensible. From the point of view of the orgone theory, it is simple enough: *orgone is not electricity*. The electroscope contains not an electrical but an orgonotic charge. Orgone does not influence electromagnetic measuring apparatus. This is a fact which I have been observing in amazement for years.

E. I shall assume your point of view, tentatively. According to that, there is no connection between orgone and electricity. This, I must say, sounds unlikely.

O. There is, in fact, a connection: *orgone energy disturbs electrical energy*. For many months, I connected voltmeters in diverse ways with my orgone apparatus and never saw the slightest reaction. Then,

one day, a very "unscientific" method of obtaining the voltmeter reaction occurred to me. Please connect the voltmeter with this dry-cell battery.

E. Done. The voltmeter shows 4 volts.

O. Now draw orgone from your hair with the polystyrene rod and move the rod sidewise past the voltmeter pointer, at a distance of about 2-5 cm.

E. You wouldn't call this an experimental method, would you?

O. Why not? Facts are facts, whether we like them or not.

E. Agreed. Well, I get a deflection of the voltmeter pointer according to the way in which I move the rod.

O. I was just as amazed as you when I saw this for the first time. But it is really quite simple and entirely in accord with other orgone observations. *The orgone deflects magnetic needles. It disturbs electromagnetic apparatus.* The so-called electromagnetic storms in the atmosphere at the time of increased sun spot activity have nothing to do with electrical or magnetic energy. They do deflect the needles of electrical measuring apparatus, that is, they disturb them in the same manner as you did when you brought about a deflection of the voltmeter with your body orgone.

E. Why, that's fantastic!

O. Only at first glance. If one gets used to it, as I have, it becomes quite simple and clarifies many natural processes which hitherto have remained obscure.

E. Somebody told me once that control experiments had been carried out and that they had not confirmed your experiments. But here every one of your contentions is proven to be true.

O. In the early phases of my orgone-physical work, I made again and again the mistake of showing to outside physicists and biologists *individual* facts. Their reaction was always the same incomprehensible one: they saw the fact, gave some "explanation" for it and be-

lieved that with that they had understood it. I had to learn that these new findings must be presented only in their logical context, and that a clear-cut distinction has to be made between *fact* and *interpretation*. For example: When I discovered the phenomenon of lumination of fluorescent electric light tubes, I showed it to a physicist. Before demonstrating it to him, I asked him what he would expect to happen if one brought a charged polystyrene rod close to the tube. He said that *nothing* was expected to happen. When the tube, nevertheless, luminated, he was at first highly surprised, but immediately found an "explanation." It was the gas in the tube, he said. I was surprised to see that this man, a good electro-physicist, failed to realize that his "explanation" did not in the least explain *why* the tube, when approached with the charged rod of insulating material, began to luminate. The specialists have too little curiosity; they are too readily content with words.

E. Your lumination experiment reminds one of the electrified atmosphere connected with the Northern lights. According to my knowledge, all astronomical radiation phenomena are explained by electrical ionization. Do the orgone experiments say anything about this?

O. You have quite correctly seen a connection here. The customary interpretations of such phenomena as the aurora borealis are altogether uncritical. In all these phenomena, we are dealing with orgone, and not with electricity.

E. Can you prove that?

O. Yes, to the extent of my experimental experience. If the Northern lights were of an electrical nature, then a voltmeter would have to react in an experimental reproduction of these phenomena. Connect one of the knobs of this fluorescent argon tube with the electroscope knob. Now move the orgone-charged polystyrene rod up and down past the tube.

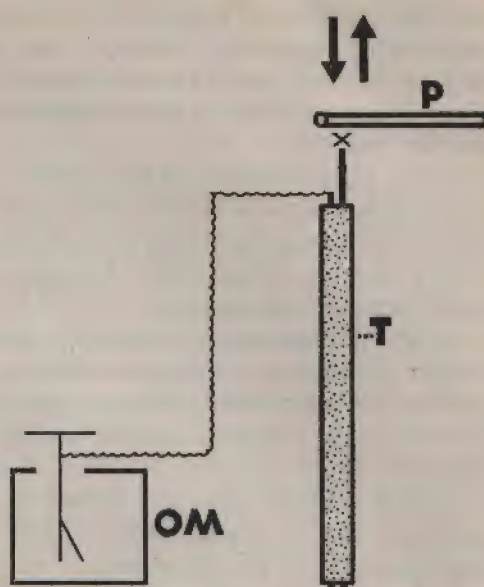


FIG. 5. Demonstration of orgonotic lumination in fluorescent tube. P = polystyrene rod; T = fluorescent tube; OM = organometer.

E. The electroscope shows deflections of several hundred volts.

O. We shall now darken the room and adapt our eyes to the darkness. Then we bring the rod close to the knob of the electroscope.

E. The tube luminates every time the rod is *brought near* it and every time it is *removed* from it; the same happens when I bring the rod near the tube itself and remove it from it.

O. That is, the orgonotic charge makes the tube luminate, is transferred through the wire to the knob of the electroscope where it brings about a deflection, and vice versa.

E. The phenomenon would disappear if we were to ground the tube.

O. Try it.

E. The phenomenon remains the same, whether the tube is grounded or not.

O. Precisely. This fact is incompatible with the theory of positive and negative electrical charges. You remember that we have not applied a tension between two charged poles. *Our energy system is unipo-*

lar. There are, in the realm of electricity, no unipolar phenomena. Wherever they may be assumed, critical examination will result in orgone reactions, and not electrical reactions.

As we know, there are charges of several hundred volts at work in the gas tube. Now connect the knobs of the tube in any way you please with a voltmeter and repeat the experiment.

E. The phenomenon of lumination as well as the electroscope reaction continue to exist. But the voltmeter does not react, whether it is connected parallel or in series.

O. This confirms again the earlier experiments and the orgone theory: orgone and electricity are not the same.

E. According to these observations, then, "static electricity" in the customary sense is not electricity at all.

O. That is the inevitable conclusion. It is merely a matter of convention whether we are going to identify the "electricity" of the ancients with the orgone and retain the concept of electricity for the orgonotic phenomena. In this case we would have to form a new concept for that which has been known as electromagnetism since Faraday, Ampère and Volta. Or else we drop the concept of electricity of the ancients, call the respective phenomena orgonotic, and restrict the concept of electricity to those phenomena which one obtains through the movement of wires in magnetic fields.

E. This is a radical and painful operation. It would inevitably influence large fields of physics, as for instance those of the colloids and the atoms.

O. I cannot help it if I am to continue to adhere to the facts which you yourself just confirmed. It will have its advantages. One will be forced to come down out of the realm of verbiage into the realm of facts.

E. That won't be easy.

O. More than that, it will be very hard.

Organized natural science becomes a means of making a living; that is one of its functions. Every kind of pioneer work is made to suffer from this as long as it cannot serve this function.

E. Do you expect these facts to be recognized by organized physics and biology?

O. I was once naive enough to do so. Only after many bitter experiences did it occur to me that the discoverer of the incandescent bulb, for example, would have been more than naive to expect the recognition of electric illumination from the manufacturers of gas lamps.

E. Who plays, in your case, the role of the gas lamp industry?

O. The pharmaceutical industry.

E. It would seem to me that the radium and X-ray industry would be even more dangerous to you.

O. I know it.

E. I have plenty of food for thought. I shall be back.

III. MEASUREMENT OF THE ELECTROSCOPIC DISCHARGE IN THE ORGONE ACCUMULATOR (1940-1941).

E. I have taken plenty of time. I would not have thought that a simple electroscope could make one rack one's brain so.

O. I had the good fortune to approach the electroscope not from inorganic physics, but from the field of the biological emotions.

E. You don't mean to say that the electroscope is more closely related to the realm of the living than to that of the non-living?

O. That is precisely what I mean: The electroscope, and not the voltmeter, is the appropriate instrument for determining the nature of biological energy processes.

E. You forget about the oscillograph all too readily.

O. I'm not forgetting about it. But if I can observe phenomena in terms of hundreds of meters I shall not use measures

of fractions of millimeters; if for no other reason, to save my eyes.

E. You make great demands on my comprehension.

O. No greater ones than were made by the functions of the orgone energy on the discoverer. It took years of hard, uninterrupted work and many sleepless nights before I could come out with the contention that orgone is not electricity. And all the words coined by physics did not make things any easier.

E. After all, you don't believe that there is a complete consensus of opinion among the electrophysicists.

O. I know; but there is immediate consensus when it comes to deny social recognition to a new discovery.

E. Bitterness does not help research. Rather, prove your contention that the electroscope is more closely related to the realm of the living than to that of the non-living.

O. I will have to qualify that statement: *The energy which governs living functioning also functions in the realm of the non-living.* This merely means that the electroscope lends itself poorly to an investigation of those processes which characterize the electric industry; and that, on the other hand, it lends itself admirably to a study of the non-living as well as the living functions of the orgone.

E. In our first discussion you explained that many functions of the orgone are incompatible with the concept of the positive and negative electric fluids. But you have failed to replace this theory by another and better one. The theory of the two electrical fluids explains the deflection of the electroscope leaf occurring with the approach of a negatively charged rubber rod: The negative electricity of the rubber attracts the positive electricity of the electroscope into the disc and repulses the negative electricity into the leaf. This negative electricity in the leaf causes the leaf to deflect. If, now, you remove the

rubber rod again, the deflection disappears; the positive electricity of the disc becomes free again and neutralizes the negative charge of the leaf.

O. We do not have to enter into a deep discussion of the theory of the positive and negative electrical fluids. I found that this theory cannot explain orgonotic phenomena; I also found facts which show clearly that orgone is not electricity. Friction electricity is only a special manifestation of the orgone energy and consequently something different from the electricity of Faraday.

E. What has that to do with measuring in terms of hundreds of meters and fractions of millimeters?

O. Orgone biophysics has been searching for years for the bridge between the realm of the orgone and the electricity of Faraday. The connection has remained obscure thus far, but its existence cannot be doubted. There are some peculiar facts to be considered. Mathematically speaking, 1000 volts cannot equal, say, 50 millivolt. But this is the impossible conclusion we would have to draw were we to equate orgone and electricity. The first measurements of the biological energy at the surface of the human organism were made with a sensitive electromagnetic oscillograph. The potential differences between an unexcited and an excited place of the surface of the organism were shown to be between 0 and 100 millivolt. On the other hand, one drawing off of energy from the hair of the head or from an erogenous zone easily results in an electroscope charge corresponding to about 1000 volts. The reactions of the electromagnetic measuring system, then, are in minimal fractions of those at the electroscope. Nevertheless, there is a connection between orgone and electricity, although it is still full of riddles. *The few millivolt of the oscillograph cannot be the same thing as the many hundred volts of the electroscope.* If we take into consideration the gigantic work

achieved by a living organism, it becomes obvious that the reactions of the static electroscope reflect reality much more truly than the galvanometer. The electroencephalogram reveals only unimportant partial reactions, for they are diminutive compared with the work of the brain in terms of energy.

E. This contradiction has never been explained. Your facts do indeed not admit of equating the volts of the voltmeter with those of the electroscope. I am just being struck by the fact that we can discharge the 1000 volts of the electroscope into our body without any harm, even without noticing it, while it would be highly unhealthy to touch a wire with a tension of 1000 volts. This speaks, indeed, in favor of a fundamental difference between the energy at the voltmeter and that at the electroscope. I must admit that now the idea that a rubber rod contains only negative electricity, without its positive counterpart, begins to strike me as peculiar.

O. You are getting entangled in that jungle of theories into which every orgone biophysicist inevitably gets in trying to differentiate the orgone from electricity. Physics has defined the unit of the static charge as equivalent to 300 volts of electrical tension. With that, the erroneous concept crept into electrics that the static tension of an electroscope is of *the same nature* as the volt tension of an electric current.

E. Apart from this conceptual clarification of the quality of the orgone, do you have any clear-cut experimental proofs that the orgone functions according to its own *specific laws*?

O. There are such proofs. So many of these are obtained with the electroscope that we are justified in calling it *orgonometer*. Would you summarize for us the prevailing theory of the discharge of the electroscope, our orgonometer?

E. That's simple enough. Strictly theoretically speaking, a charged electroscope

should retain its charge. Experience shows that this is not quite the case. There is a *spontaneous* discharge of charged electroscopes, the so-called "natural leak." It is usually ascribed to the humidity of the air which is assumed to establish a connection between the rod which carries the leaf and the casing. However, there is no consensus of opinion on this point among physicists. But if one subtracts the spontaneous discharge from the measurements made, it is possible to exactly determine the speed of discharge. This principle is always used in radium research. It is the following: *Radiation of any kind electrifies or ionizes the air between the rod and the casing. Since ionized air equalizes electrical potentials more quickly than non-ionized or weakly ionized air, the speed of discharge of the electroscope is an indication of the intensity of the ionization effect.*

O. According to this concept, then, the quantity of an electrical energy from a source of radiation is in direct proportion to the speed of the electroscope discharge. In other words, the more intensive the radiation, the more rapid the discharge.

E. That's right. This is the principle of the measurement of cosmic radiation. In the higher strata of the atmosphere electroscopes discharge more rapidly than in lower strata. This points to a more intensive cosmic radiation in the higher strata. The lower intensity in lower strata is ascribed to the absorption of the cosmic rays by the atmospheric air. But the cosmic rays possess a gigantic capacity of penetration for they have been found, by way of measurement of the electroscopic discharge, deep down in the ocean and in mines. This capacity for penetration is as yet not understood.

O. This concept can be correct only if the prevailing theory of electroscopic discharge is correct. It stands and falls with the theory of the electroscope.

E. You don't doubt the fact, do you, that an electroscope which contains radium or is exposed to Xrays discharges more quickly than an electroscope without such ionizing influence?

O. I don't doubt these facts. But I object to the uncritical application of concepts which are valid in one field to another field. You leave out of consideration the *spontaneous* discharge of the electroscope.

E. Not at all. The air always contains a certain amount of free ions; this amount may be very small, but still large enough to explain the spontaneous discharge of the electroscope.

O. If I remember correctly, the phenomenon of lightning is now explained by "air electricity." But you say that the ion content of the air is very small; otherwise the air could not be a poor conductor, or, to put it differently, a good insulator. How can this statement be brought into harmony with the other statement that such vast amounts of energy can accumulate in the atmosphere that one single bolt of lightning can discharge millions of volts?

E. This is indeed a contradiction which has remained unexplained. One simply does not know where the gigantic amounts of electrical energy discharged in a thunderstorm come from. They are at variance with the very small amount of free ions in the atmosphere.

O. Does it not seem to you that we are meeting here the same impossible equation according to which millions of volts equal millivolts?

E. So it seems, indeed.

O. From the standpoint of the theory of positive and negative electricity, this queer equation is unsolvable. But we know that the atmosphere contains orgone, and that orgone is not electricity, though we do not know what the latter is and how it functions. Let us introduce our orgone and, from now on, carry out our measure-

ments not "electroscopically," but organometrically.

E. All right. I admit I am very curious, as I find myself in a tight corner. You are aware that you have to prove quite a lot.

O. I know. What experiment would you suggest?

E. I can only start out from certain known suppositions. One is the acceleration of electroscopic discharge under the influence of ionizing radiation. The existence of an energy in the atmosphere is visually proven. Let us measure the speed of discharge within and without your orgone accumulator. If the speed of discharge is the same inside and out, then there is no difference in the energy concentration. That is, your contention of a concentration of the atmospheric energy in the accumulator would be proven incorrect, and we would be unable to decide the question whether orgone is the same as electricity or not. If, on the other hand, the accumulator concentrates the energy, then there must be a difference in the speed of the electroscopic discharge. If your orgone is the same as electricity, as I am still assuming, then the electroscope will discharge more quickly on the inside than on the outside. Right?

O. Yes, on the proviso that you admit the difference between orgone and electrical radiation energy if the experimental result is neither of the two you mentioned, but a third, unexpected one.

E. Granted. But I do not expect a third possibility. Only the two I mentioned are conceivable.

O. Let's proceed to the experiment. We charge the electroscope, my organometer, in each case to the same scale division.

E. . . . The electroscope discharges *much more slowly* in the orgone accumulator than on the outside. None of the two predicted possibilities came true. This result is altogether unexpected, and I cannot explain it.

O. For the sole reason that you continue

to approach the orgone function from the theoretical assumptions of electricians.

E. There could be this explanation: the air on the outside circulates more quickly around the electroscope than on the inside of the accumulator; consequently, a greater number of air ions pass by and accelerate the discharge compared with that on the inside.

O. Couldn't that be checked?

E. I shall let the electroscope discharge twice in the open air: one time as is, and one time with the use of an electric fan. . . . I find that *the fan has no influence* on the speed of discharge. After this, I must admit a fundamental difference—even an antithesis—between the atmospheric energy and electromagnetic radiation. But now it is up to you to make comprehensible this result which clearly contradicts the application of electrical concepts.

O. That will not be possible without further observations at the organometer. It is easy to see that, say, a Slav, whom we do not know, reacts differently from an Englishman whom we know well. It is much more difficult to define this difference, before one has gotten to know the unknown. You will admit now that one has to rid oneself of the misplaced application of the theory of the two opposite electrical fluids before one can even start really to understand the orgone which is something quite different.

E. I am glad to admit that now. I am very curious what the study of the specific organotic qualities will reveal. Have you any ideas?

O. Although I know that the orgone is an energy with specific biological action, and although it would be easy to derive a hypothesis from the specific biological functions of the orgone, I prefer to let the experiment speak for itself. If the experimental results agree with the basic biological functions, all the better. If not, there will be new riddles.

E. I couldn't say at this moment which possibility I would prefer. If there were agreement, this would provide a decisive insight into the riddle of living functioning. If there were not, we would have a lot to think about.

O. The moment of discovery is as exciting as the search. For the rest, we cannot give in to our subjective inclinations. Whether we want to or not, we have to bow to the facts.

IV. VARIATIONS IN ATMOSPHERIC ORGONE CONCENTRATION. A PRELIMINARY INTERPRETATION OF THE ORGONE FUNCTION (AUGUST 1941).

E. I have tried to explain to myself the slower speed of discharge of the organometer in the orgone accumulator. I don't know. I thought there might be, somewhere outside of the accumulator, radio-active substances. These might explain the fact that the organometer discharges more slowly in the accumulator than on the outside. In that case, the metal walls would keep out the accelerating influence of the radio-active substances.

O. Do you assume that such radio-active substances are to be found *everywhere*?

E. No.

O. You obtain the same result no matter where you place the apparatus. Orgone is present everywhere, even though in varying concentrations. Radio-active substances, on the other hand, are of rare occurrence.

E. That's true. Your theory would be strengthened if the result of a slower discharge with a *stronger* orgone influence could be confirmed in some other way.

O. There is such a confirmation. I found it by chance when, in the summer of 1941, I measured the daily variations of the atmospheric orgone concentration over a period of several weeks.

E. What gave you that idea? As far as I know, such an experiment was never made before.

O. This experiment was made in order to refute the assumption of the influence of humidity or of atmospheric "electricity" on the spontaneous discharge of the electroscope. If you measure the electroscopic discharges every hour, what result would you expect, from the standpoint of the air ion theory?

E. It may be one of two things. First, one might assume that the ion content of the air remains about constant. In this case, the spontaneous discharges of the electroscope would also remain about constant. Second, one could assume that the sun radiation increases the electric charges of the air. For example, the air at high altitudes is strongly ionized, containing much ozone. In this case, one would expect that the discharge of the electroscope would be slowest in the early morning, most rapid at high noon, and again slower toward evening.

O. From the standpoint of your electric theory, this expectation is entirely correct. However, the hourly measurements with the organometer show the exact opposite. Do you want to try it?

E. This is too important to be taken lightly. I shall check up on it. . . . I find you are right: *On clear days, the discharge of the electroscope is far more rapid in the early morning than between 2 and 4 PM, and it becomes again more rapid toward evening.* This is at variance with the theory of ionization; on the other hand, it is in accord with the results obtained from measuring the discharge inside and outside of the accumulator. But that doesn't make the result comprehensible. Clearly enough, the ionization theory fails here; it is difficult to think of a different interpretation.

O. Let's leave the interpretation to further observation. Again from the point of view of the ionization theory, what would you expect in the case of cloud formation or of a thunderstorm?

E. In that case, the electroscope would

discharge much more slowly because the clouds decrease the ionization of the air by the sun and because they take up electrical charges from the atmosphere.

O. Will you take some measurements? It so happens that there is a good deal of cloud formation just at this moment.

E. . . . Why, I find that the electroscopic discharges become *more rapid* before and during cloud formation. A unit of charge which, during clear weather, takes dozens of minutes for discharge discharges in a very few minutes during strong cloud formation. I am going to check up on this at home on the occasion of the next thunderstorm.

O. Our organometer, then, measures orgone, and not electrical charges. Before reaching any theoretical conclusions, I would like to mention a further contradiction in the theory of electricity, a contradiction which is completely solved by the discovery of the atmospheric orgone. Does an electrically charged metal sphere, provided with a metal point, discharge more rapidly or more slowly than a similar sphere without such a point?

E. The sphere with the point will, of course, discharge much more quickly, that is, give off its electrical charge to the surrounding air much more rapidly than a sphere without a point. Every schoolboy knows that!

O. Exactly. Now, another question: How does physics explain the effect of the lightning rod?

E. That too, every schoolboy knows. Benjamin Franklin had observed the fact that metal points take off electrical charges from rubbed electrical substances such as amber or glass. That's what he based his lightning rod on. The metal point takes up the electricity from the charged cloud. It also attracts the lightning and conducts it, being of metal, to the ground, thus protecting the building against the uncontrollable spreading of the lightning electricity.

O. Wasn't there a dispute among the members of a learned commission as to whether the lightning rod should be provided with a sphere or a point?

E. There was, but I don't see why you should mention this uninteresting matter.

O. I only wished to indicate that, as long as 200 years ago, there was an inkling present of the contradiction in the concept of electricity which we are now discussing. Have you been struck by the fact that one and the same theory assumes that a point will *give off* electricity more easily and at the same time, that a point will *absorb* it more easily? Is it conceivable that one and the same instrument should fulfill these two antagonistic functions with one and the same energy?

E. I was never struck by that contradiction, but I would think that many a physicist would have given it thought.

O. Would it be possible to take off electrical energy from a charged sphere by placing a lightning rod at a distance of, say, 1 meter?

E. I don't know, but I would doubt it. The electron tubes and X-ray tubes certainly do not contain any kind of points at the anode for the purpose of attracting the electrons coming from the cathode. On the other hand, there is the "electric wind" at a candle flame which is placed between a metal point as cathode and a plate as anode.

O. I do not intend to meddle in problems of electricity. It is not my field. But in order to get anywhere at all I have to separate the orgone—which is well known to me though not to the electrophysicist—from electricity; without doing so, we could not even understand the results of our measurements of the electroscopic discharges. The principle of the lightning rod was gained from the phenomena of "friction electricity." It is strictly at variance with the principle of electricity which is gained through the movement of wires in magnetic fields. We have seen that the

old static electricity, or friction electricity, is only a special case of the orgone. The principle of the lightning rod is absolutely correct; only, it has nothing to do with electricity. The lightning rod does not take off "electricity" from the clouds or from the lightning, but orgone, just as does the point at our fluorescent gas tube.

E. That is logical, but will kick up a lot of dust.

O. Suppose it does. The facts are completely in harmony if viewed from the point of view of the orgone functions. They are at variance if they are forced into an all-embracing electrical theory. But now we might venture a first interpretation of the discharges at the organometer. Do you think that the well-known principle of the equalization of different levels of charge or tension is applicable here?

E. Water flows from a higher basin, or one with a greater potential energy of drop, to a lower basin with lower potential energy, and not vice versa. This is the principle of the equalization of potential differences. The "tension" existing between higher and lower altitude or stronger and weaker charge constitutes the "potential difference"; the work produced corresponds to the kinetic energy which results from the potential energy in the process of equalization of the potential difference. This is true of the "energy of position" as well as for electrical or caloric energy. A warmer body gives off heat to the colder one and not vice versa. These are some of the most elementary principles of physics and I would hardly expect you to doubt them.

O. Far from it. My only interest is that of investigating, without prejudice, the functions of the orgone energy; in doing so, I cannot let myself be led astray by principles which are valid for other forms of energy. One reason for overlooking the orgone and for misinterpreting static elec-

tricity is precisely the fact that the orgone follows different natural laws. Now, according to the basic law of electricity, energy always flows from a more highly charged body to a less highly charged one. What would you expect to happen, then, when you touch an electroscope which is charged with about 200 volts with your finger? As you have seen, we can easily take off from our hair an amount corresponding to about 1000 volts, with one gentle stroke over the hair. Our organism is much more highly charged than the electroscope.

E. According to our theory, the electroscope would become charged to its full capacity from our organism.

O. Please touch this electroscope which is charged in the amount of about 500 volts.

E. It *discharges* promptly and completely when I touch the disc with my finger: *energy flows from the less highly charged to the more highly charged body*. That simply doesn't make sense!

O. It does, indeed, not make sense if you apply your electrical theory to the phenomenon. It does make sense if we realize the validity of specific organotic laws of functioning. We must assume that every organism represents an *organotic energy system* of its own. A stronger gamete attracts a weaker one, the ovum attracts the spermatozoon, etc.; a sand bion with a strong orgone charge kills an organotically weak bacterium, simply by withdrawing orgone energy from it.

E. I don't know anything about biology, so I cannot judge the validity of your statements.

O. The cosmic orgone energy was discovered in the course of studying *the dynamics of the instincts and of sexual-biological functions*. The orgone energy, then, must contain those energy functions which constitute the specific difference between life functions and mechanico-physical functions. The reason why the

biologists did not discover the fundamental law of biological pulsation lies precisely in the fact that they tried to apply the laws of chemistry and physics in the realm of the living as they operate in the realm of the non-living. This methodological question will be a matter of polemics between orgone biophysics and the biologists. But it seems to me that the physicist cannot afford to keep himself aloof from the specifically living functioning. Not only because he approaches the processes of nature as the living system which he is himself, but also because there is a form of energy, the orgone, which does not follow mechanistic laws. The overlooking of the specificity of biological energy functions caused also the overlooking of the atmospheric orgone. Physics presumed the rank of the leading natural science even in the realm of biology. It has not come up to such expectations. More than that, I am convinced that the mechanistic concepts of the universe held by physics has blocked to biology the path to an understanding of the life functions.

E. You are getting dangerously close to talking like the metaphysicists who assume the existence of a special "life force."

O. Well, nobody will doubt the existence of an energy or force which governs living functioning. It is only a matter of how one conceives of it and how one comprehends it. Physicists and mechanistic biologists simply deny its existence altogether. Metaphysical biologists divorce the life force completely from the realm of physics and relegate it to the realm of the supernatural. Orgone biophysics solves this conflict: The specific biological energy is nothing metaphysical; it exists physically in the atmosphere, outside of the living organism, and is tangible visually, thermically and electroscopically; it exists, biologically functioning, in the soil and in the living organism. There is a continual process of energy metabolism between the purely physical and the biological form

of the orgone, as seen, for example, in the respiration of plant and animal. The orgone experiments show that the physicist, even though he be not a biologist, could gain much from the knowledge of purely biological functions.

E. As you probably know, a great many physicists are dissatisfied with the mechanistic concept of things. Many are metaphysicists and mechanists at one and the same time. They believe in the transmigration of souls . . .

O. and fight a functional energy concept of the life process. Yes, I have seen that a great many times.

E. The change from a purely mechanistic to functional thinking in physics has not satisfied the physicists' craving for metaphysics. The study of the transformation of chemical elements, and the dissolution of the absolute antithesis of matter and energy, it is true, have shaken the mechanistic world concept considerably; but instead of clarity there is only more confusion now. The gaps which were created in the mechanistic principle of causality have not been filled by a better, more reliable method of thought. I think that if we want to interpret your new findings we will have to go back to the simplest observations which were made in the early days of the theory of electricity.

O. Quite so. It is all too easy to get lost in the ocean of words and concepts which, in the course of centuries, were formed out of a lot of unrelated details.

E. Let us return to the primitive fact that a charged metal sphere *loses* energy through a metal point . . .

O. . . and, that the same metal sphere can *take up* energy through a metal point. The materials and their form are the same in both cases. Yet, the processes are exactly opposite. It follows, inevitably, that the energy in the one process is not the same energy as in the other.

E. The process by which we charge

your organometer is that of electrical *influence*. The negatively charged rod of insulating material draws positive electricity through influence into the point and gives off negative electricity into the electroscope leaf, which makes it deflect.

O. Can you describe the *form* in which this function of influence takes place?

E. The process is a continual, gradual one.

O. Now, does the equalization between the negative electricity of the leaf and the positive of the sphere take place one time, or does it occur repeatedly?

E. According to the basic law of electricity, it can be only one time. If, for example, the rubber rod has attracted a freely suspended cork and touches it, the antithetical electrical substances or fluids become equalized. The cork takes up the electricity of the rubber rod and is consequently repelled. It cannot be attracted again without a new manipulation. Otherwise we would have produced the *perpetuum mobile*!

O. Another theoretical orientation, in my case the organotic one, leads to new arrangements which prove the old concept to be erroneous and replace it by a more correct and more inclusive one.

E. There were some electrophysicists who did not speak of positive and negative electricity, but of a *more* of electricity as compared with a *less* of it. Others spoke of an "affluence" and "effluence" of electricity.

O. Let us stop here to discuss the concept of electrical influence. We bring our negatively charged rubber rod close to the point of the electroscope and achieve a deflection of the leaf through "electrical influence." The rubber rod does *not* touch the metal of the electroscope. That is, electricity does not flow from the rubber rod into the metal of the electroscope. The effect of the influence takes place through the air, or, better, as the result of an *elec-*

trical field between rubber rod and metal point.

E. That's correct.

O. Now, I bring my hand close to the electroscope, approaching it from above. If the electroscope is charged, that is, if the leaf is deflected, it begins to move; it goes down when I bring my hand close and it returns to its former deflection when I remove my hand.

E. I see that.

O. If, however, the electroscope is not charged, I cannot produce a movement of the leaf with my hand.

E. After all, your hand is not a charged rubber rod . . .

O. . . but it is surrounded by an energy field! Why does the electroscope react to the electrical field or the influence by the rubber rod but not to the electrical field, or influence, of my hand?

E. This contradiction has never been explained.

O. There is more to it. As we have seen, I can influence with the energy field of my hand a charged electroscope, but not an uncharged one.

E. I admit that is a riddle.

O. Our electroscope at the moment discharges an amount of energy corresponding to about 600 volts. That is, my energy field, like that of the rubber rod, is capable of strongly influencing the amount of 600 volts, increasing or decreasing it.

E. That's a demonstrated fact. But I don't see what you are getting at.

O. I would like to demonstrate the absurdity of a certain kind of scientific thinking: the method of drawing conclusions from *isolated* phenomena, *without making comparisons*. Please connect the poles of this 6-volt battery and see what happens at this voltmeter.

E. It shows 6 volts.

O. Now bring the rubbed polystyrene rod close to the wire, and then your palm.

E. . . . There is no reaction.

O. Exactly. Now, according to your the-

ory of electricity, it should be possible that our palms or the rubbed polystyrene rod definitely disturb 600 volts by influence while at the same time they cannot influence 6 volts. Such a thing cannot be possible. The wire contains electrons, and so does the metal of the electroscope. The electrons of the electroscope, then, should be set in motion by influence, while those of the wire are not?

E. Well, in the wire the electricity *flows*, while in the electroscope it is *static*.

O. Will a whip get a standing horse going but not influence one that is in motion?

E. I admit the contradiction, but there are plenty of unsolved problems in electrophysics.

O. All the more incomprehensible is the arrogance of so many of its representatives. The point is this: The field effect of the palm and the rod, which you call influence, is due to an *orgonotic energy field* and not an electrical one. Otherwise, my palm would disturb the 6-volt tension just as it does the 600-volt tension. Now let us try to understand the purely physical functions of the orgone by approaching it from the angle of *biological* observation. Two organisms of different sexes show "sexual attraction." If we take the energy conception of such fundamental processes as sexuality seriously, we must consider the *attraction in sexual excitation an orgonotic energy process*. From a strict functional point of view, there is no process without its counterpart. The counterpart of attraction is *repulsion*. Repulsion, also, is a function of sexuality. Two copulating organisms, after attraction has taken place, remain attached to each other until an energy discharge takes place in the orgasm, in which the sexual substances, as a result of repeated muscular contractions, are expelled. After this has occurred, the organisms detach themselves from each other.

E. That seems very far-fetched to me. Do you mean to say you wish to construe

a relationship with the attraction and repulsion of the electroscope leaf?

O. Not so fast. The sexual processes are not determined by positive and negative charges. The male and the female organisms are not charged with "opposite" charges, but they are both *excited* by the same unitary energy. This energy clearly shows two antithetical functions: attraction and dissociation (or repulsion). There is no reason to assume the existence of two separate substances or fluids for these two antithetical functions. As the experiment shows, it is one and the same orgone energy which functions in two antithetical directions or ways, like this:

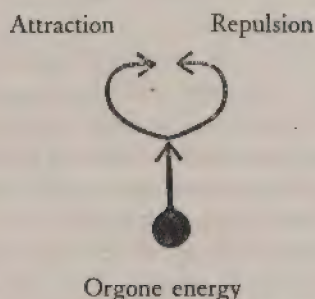


FIG. 6. Attraction and repulsion as antithetical functions of the orgone energy.

E. If this is not just a new hypothesis added on to a thousand others, if your hypothesis explains known facts better than my hypothesis, and if it explains new connections, I shall agree. But let's not get too far afield. We started with the question: What is the principle according to which the discharge of my electroscope—your orgonometer—takes place if the principle of the equalization of potential differences is not applicable?

O. I had a good reason for leading up to this question, but could not do it very well without the detour into biology. These biological considerations help the orgone-physical experiment; they carry us further and fulfill your demands for the justification of a hypothesis.

E. I am eager to see your experimental proof.

O. We shall carry out this experiment in the dark orgone room. Please take orgone from your hair, and bring the excited polystyrene rod as close to this tubular fluorescent argon lamp as about 5 cm. Then keep your hand steady.

E. . . . I have done so several times. Nothing much happened, except that a small area of the lamp began to glow once.

O. Now carry out another experiment: Hold the rod at a distance of about 30 cm from the lamp, then bring it close to the lamp, so as to almost touch it, and remove it again. Repeat this as often as you please.

E. . . . As I come close, the lamp glows several times; this happens at shorter intervals as I come closer. If I hold the rod quiet at the same distance, nothing happens. If I move it away from the lamp, it glows again, several times in succession. The more frequently I repeat the movement of the rod to and fro, the lighter does the lamp become.

O. Now move the excited rod along the lamp, lengthwise and evenly.

E. . . . There is an irregular flickering. The glowing of the argon is intermittent and does not seem to be a direct result of the even movement of the rod.

O. These phenomena cannot be explained by a uniform electrical influence from the rod to the gas or its ions. Otherwise, the lamp would glow as long as electrical energy from the rod influences it. Then, when the electrical energy was discharged, the glowing would disappear. On the other hand, these phenomena are in full accord with the basic functions of living systems. The lamp glows only when the rod is brought closer to it and when it is removed again; it does not glow when the rod is not being moved. A muscle contracts only when the galvanic current is turned on and when it is turned off,

not when a steady current is sent through it. In addition, it does not contract according to the electrical stimulus, but according to its bio-energetic structure. In response to the same stimulus, the striated muscle contracts rapidly, the smooth muscle slowly and in a wave-like manner. The contraction of the muscle is only precipitated by the turning on and off of the current. The energy of the contraction, however, lies in the muscle itself. It is not the electrical energy supplied from the outside which is expressed in the contraction but the biological energy in the muscle which is stimulated by the turning on and off of the current. In our experiment, you brought an orgone-excited rod close to the fluorescent lamp and removed it again. The lamp "luminesces" when the orgone charge is *moved* but not when it is at rest. This phenomenon of *lumination*, as we call it, is based on an *alteration* of the field of the energy in the rod, and not on the static influence of the energy field.

E. I understand. You leave the field of the positive and negative fluids or substances and enter the field of moving energy fields. Would you equate "energy field effect" and "charge"? You said that the orgone "charges" the organometer.

O. You will admit that it is extremely useful occasionally to go back to the most elementary concepts. As a matter of fact, I do not believe that the orgone rod "charges" the organometer, but that, by way of the moving orgone field, it "*excites*" it. Typically, this excitation occurs only when the contact of the energy field with the excited substance is *established* and when it is *interrupted*. The fluorescent lamp luminesces only when the rod is brought close and when it is removed. If we move the energy field lengthwise along the lamp, there is a sequence of contacts and contact-interruptions. Accordingly, the lamp flickers; it luminesces and stops luminescing intermittently.

E. Faraday did not succeed with his induction experiments until he hit upon the idea of turning on and off the current in the primary coil, in other words, of making excitations and fields of excitations *appear* and *disappear*. The secondary coil develops a current only with the appearance and disappearance of the energy field in the primary coil; it does not react to a constant current.

O. This is probably the place where the riddle of the connection between orgone and electrical current has to be looked for. But let's not go into that now. We shall only remember that there is a functional resemblance between the contraction of the muscle when the current is turned on or off, the induction current in the secondary coil with the turning on or off of the current in the primary coil, and the lumination of our argon lamp when the orgone rod is brought close or removed. In all three cases, the process is dynamic, that is functional, and not static. It is not a matter of one discharge of positive and negative electrical particles, but of a repeated attraction and dissociation in the excited substance.

E. Can you demonstrate this experimentally?

O. Yes; after having freed myself of the static concept of the two separate electrical fluids, I found a way of experimental demonstration. Instead of the rigid and heavy, and therefore clumsily moving, aluminum or gold leaves we use two thin silk threads. These we attach to a metal rod; we then interrupt the conduction from the metal rod to the metal knob by an intermediate piece of hard rubber or plastic, and bring our orgone rod close to the knob. Do you want to try it?

E. When I bring the rod which was excited with hair orgone to the knob, there are several successive attractions and repulsions of the silk threads. The same happens when I take the rod away. The reaction reminds me of contracting frog's

legs. At first I felt like rejecting this comparison.¹

O. Nevertheless, it is entirely correct. In addition, you have reproduced the phenomenon of lumination in a *mechanical* form. The silk threads remain immobile when you do not move the rod. They move back and forth when you bring the rod close and when you remove it again.

E. This demonstration is simple and convincing. I admit that in this case the assumption of two electrical fluids does not apply. What we see is not a single attraction with consecutive repulsion, but repeated attraction and repulsion. What is your conclusion from this observation?

O. We must assume that every *establishment of contact* and every *interruption of contact* in the energy field goes with two opposite functions in the excited substance: *appearance* and *disappearance of excitation*. The fluorescent lamp lumines and ceases to luminate; in the secondary coil a current appears and disappears; our silk threads attract and then repel one another.

E. In brief, you replace the attraction of the positive and negative electrical charges by the attraction of two organotically excited substances which are exposed to the influence of one and the same orgone energy. Furthermore, you replace the repulsion due to two negative or two positive electrical fluids by the repulsion or dissociation of two organotically excited bodies due to the disappearance of the excitation or lumination.

O. The observation of the processes of biological excitation allows of no other

conclusion. The copulation and separation of two biological individuals are the prototype of the phenomenon. The phenomenon of the attraction of two organotically excited systems is clearly and simply demonstrated to us in the realm of biology. The phenomenon of dissociation is more complex.

E. We started out from the fact that the slower speed of discharge of the electroscope in the orgone accumulator and around noontime cannot be explained on the basis of the ion theory. But neither do I see how the function of attraction and repulsion of the orgone energy explains the phenomenon.

O. In the early days of orgone physics, I tried to explain the slower discharge of the organometer in the accumulator by the principle of the potential difference. I assumed that the electroscope could discharge less easily into an atmosphere with a high orgone tension than into one with a low orgone tension. However, this assumption had to be dropped. Since it is always the stronger organotical system which withdraws energy from the weaker one, there can be no potential difference in the sense of mechanics (from higher level to lower level) or electrics (from higher tension to lower tension). Another assumption was more in accord with the facts: the orgone-excited organometer gives off orgone to the surrounding air and, at the same time, takes up orgone from it. *Emission* and *absorption* of energy take place simultaneously. A vacuum tube in the orgone room takes up orgone and at the same time emits it. That is, we must give up the customary concept of potential difference and must assume a simultaneous emission and absorption of orgone energy. I suggest that we postpone the application of this new concept to the spontaneous discharges of the organometer until such time when further observations have made us more familiar with the characteristics of the orgone functions.

¹ *Translator's note:* It seems indeed peculiar that the movement of a pair of silk threads should remind one of a biological movement. I well remember my amazement when I saw this experiment for the first time. Yet, my immediate impression was that of moving frog's legs. The witnessing of such experiments which again and again demonstrate the functioning of a unitary energy both in the physical as well as the biological realm is one of the most impressive experiences.—T. P. W.

Thus far, at any rate, we have established the following pairs of functions:

1. *Absorption* and *emission* of orgone;
2. *Attraction* and *repulsion* of two organotic systems;
3. *Lumination* and *cessation* of lumination in the moving orgone field.

V. ORGONOTIC ATTRACTION AND REPULSION (CONTRACTION AND EXPANSION). IN THE ORGONE ENERGY FIELD (1942).

E. Since our last discussion I have convinced myself that the speed of discharge of the organometer increases shortly before a thunderstorm; during a storm, several scale divisions discharge in seconds or even fractions of seconds instead of in half an hour or even hours as usual. This confirms your observation, which opens a new avenue of approach to the problem of weather formation. This observation cannot be explained away. At any rate, it is more interesting to participate in this breakthrough into unexplored realms than to refuse to do so as I did in the beginning. Your art of interpretation is contagious: could it be that the organometer functions *biophysically* when in good weather it maintains the deflection longer than in bad weather? After all, it registers biologically effective physical energy, so why should it not react biophysically?

O. I don't quite see what you mean.

E. In good weather, an animal stretches out comfortably, in bad weather it retreats into itself. That is, it *expands* and *contracts* according to the weather, entirely in accord with the function of organotic attraction and dissociation of the particles.

O. I am glad to see that you thought this out to its logical conclusion. When I had to reject the original mechanistic interpretation of the speed of discharge, I was at first at a loss. Gradually, I formed the idea which you just put forth. I did not mention it last time because I thought it might disturb our friendship. But I think it is entirely justifiable to say: *With high*

atmospheric orgone tension the deflection lasts longer because the organometer leaves can expand and dissociate longer. Biophysically speaking, they "feel better" in a high orgone concentration than in a low one. In other words, we are not dealing with potential differences as in the case of mechanical or electrical energy, but with strong or weak attraction and dissociation. Now, biophysical pulsation consists of rhythmically alternating expansion and contraction. The expansion of the orgone corresponds to the dissociation or repulsion of the organotic particles, the contraction corresponds to their association or attraction. Do you consider this conclusion justified?

E. Yes, it is theoretically correct, but can hardly be demonstrated experimentally. In order to demonstrate it, one would have to make a *non-living* system expand and contract rhythmically, and that cannot be done.

O. It is possible to reproduce the dissociation of the particles in the form of a *repulsion* and the association in the form of an *attraction* of the particles. It is not yet possible, though, to produce attraction (contraction, association) and repulsion (expansion, dissociation) *alternatingly in one body*. That would be the same as producing a homunculus. It is possible, however, to reproduce these two basic orgone functions *separately*, that is, in different substances.

E. This would indeed be an important practical step beyond mere theory. What are the experimental arrangements?

O. They are simple. But to remain with the concepts for a moment: Repulsion and attraction are *energy functions*; they are the basis of the corresponding *changes in the state of matter*, disintegration, dissociation, association, cohesion. According to this, the *state of matter is determined by the relative function of its energy*.

Now let us demonstrate the functions of repulsion and attraction. We connect

this iron sphere of about 3 cm diameter with the metal rod of the organometer by way of a wire. On each side of the sphere, at a distance of about 2-3 mm and at the height of the equator, we suspend a substance in pendulum form. For a reason to be explained later, I suggest 16 cm as the length of the pendulum. The pendulum on the left carries a small piece of cork, that is, an organic substance; that on the right, a thin tin foil of about 5 mm length. As you see, the pendulums do not move at all. Now please charge the organometer.

E. . . . The piece of cork moves toward the metal sphere and adheres to it. The tin foil was first attracted but then immediately repulsed again.

O. Did the tin foil return to its original vertical resting position?

E. No, it is being kept away from the metal sphere. That is, the organotically

E. The cork continues to adhere to the sphere; the tin foil is kept away at an increasing distance. That is, we can observe how the repulsion increases; the increase in the attraction of the cork we can only surmise but not observe.

O. One and the same excitation of the metal sphere has an antithetical effect: it repels the metal and attracts organic material. According to your theory of the two electrical fluids which are present in the metal and in the organic substance, the effect would have to be the same in either case: first attraction, then repulsion, in the case of the metal as well as that of the cork. Our experiment produces the two reactions separately.

E. The orgone energy, then, is composed not of two antithetical fluids, but of two antithetical functions, attraction and repulsion; and each of these functions has

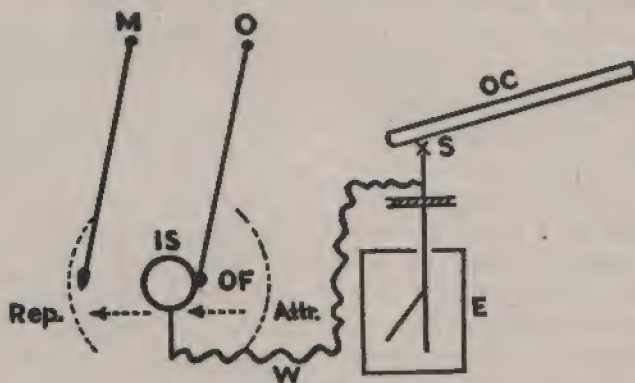


FIG. 7. Demonstration of organotonic attraction of organic and organotonic repulsion of metallic material.

O: organic material.
M: metallic material.
OF: orgone energy field.
IS: iron sphere.
Attr.: attraction.
Rep.: repulsion.

E: electrostatic organometer, grounded or not grounded.
W: wire connection.
OC: orgone carrier (polystyrene rod).
S: spark to the tip of the electrostatic organometer.
←: direction of deflection.

excited metal sphere has *attracted* the piece of cork and holds it fast, while it *repels* the tin foil and keeps it away.

O. Please continue to charge.

a specific relationship with the nature of the substance. In chemistry, one knows metals, metalloids and carbon compounds . . .

O. I must interrupt you here. Let us postpone the discussion of these relationships to the chemical function. It has to do, among other things, with the energy function of chemical affinity. For that, we are not yet prepared. Let us confine ourselves to the conclusions which can be drawn from this one experiment, otherwise we would get lost in speculation. Let us introduce into our experiment a second metal sphere which is connected with a second organometer. Sphere II is at a distance of about 1-2 cm from sphere I. Exactly in the middle between the two spheres is suspended a small piece of cork through which thin pieces of iron and copper wire have been stuck in all directions. It represents a combination of organic and metallic material which we shall term MO. On the free side of sphere I we have the tin foil, on that of sphere II a piece of cork. Please charge organometer I with orgone from your hair.

E. . . . The combination MO oscillates back and forth between the two spheres. Each sphere alternately attracts and repels it. The tin foil (M) is repelled and kept away by sphere I, while the cork (O) is attracted and held fast by sphere II. I notice that the organometer II, without direct influence, has become charged spontaneously. How do you explain that?

O. The *total system* is charged with orgone. Each spark from the rod to the organometer tip has added a certain amount of orgone energy to the total system. *Orgone energy fields* were formed around both spheres. The tin foil (M), influenced by only *one* orgone field, was repelled and is being kept away. The combination MO oscillates back and forth because it is influenced by *both* fields, in the sense of both attraction and repulsion.

E. Let us ground the case of organometer I . . . The total system gradually becomes discharged. Let us repeat the experiment by charging organometer II

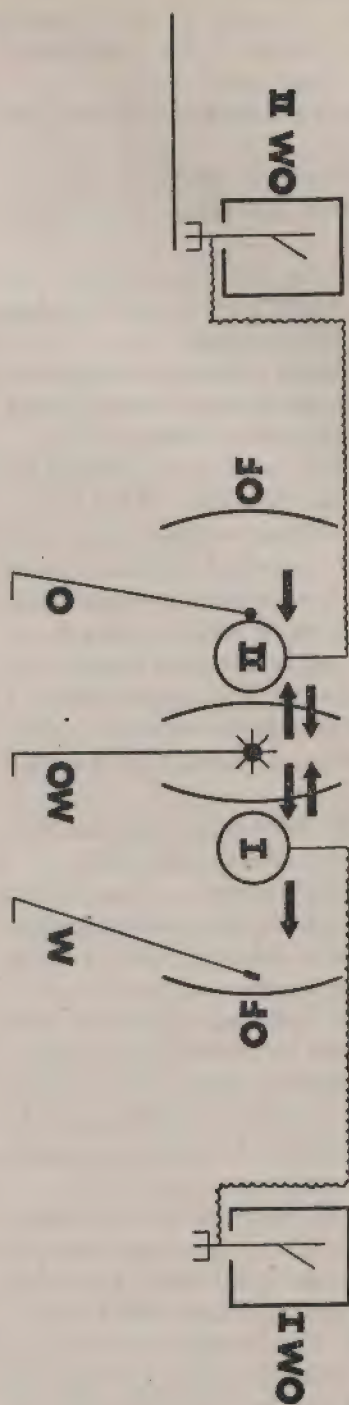


FIG. 8. Demonstration of the orgonotic functions of repulsion and attraction.

OM = organometer; OF = orgone energy field; I, II = iron sphere I and II; M = pendulum with metallic material; MO = pendulum with combination of metallic and organic material; O = pendulum with organic material.

. . . We obtain the same result as with charging organometer I.

O. Let us put the tin foil (M) between the spheres instead of the combination MO. Now charge sphere I.

E. The tin foil oscillates between the spheres.

O. Discharge both spheres by touching the organometer tips. Then charge sphere II alone.

E. During the discharge, the tin foil kept still. It began again to oscillate when I charged sphere II alone.

O. Let us again discharge both spheres. Then we charge them alternately with one spark each, that is, *evenly*.

E. . . . *The tin foil does not oscillate, but remains still in the middle. That is, it is held fast by the two repulsion fields between the two spheres.* I shall check up on this. If the interpretation is correct, the tin foil must move toward sphere I and not toward sphere II when I reduce the charge of sphere I. . . . It does. When I charge sphere I more strongly than sphere II the tin foil moves from sphere I toward sphere II.

O. Another check consists in discharging one of the spheres completely.

E. I discharge sphere I. The tin foil oscillates vigorously between the spheres. . . . I discharge sphere II also. . . . The foil no longer moves.

O. Organic material is attracted and held fast. Metal is attracted for a moment and then steadily kept away. Consequently, *the combination (MO) will be neither attracted nor be kept away; it only oscillates somewhat.*

E. . . . MO oscillates vividly between two charged spheres; near *one* charged sphere it swings slightly back and forth. The energy field of *the one sphere* attracts MO *a little*. The complete attraction of the organic material is contradicted by the repulsion of the metallic material. The sphere does not keep MO steadily away as it does M, for the O in MO contradicts

the repulsion by attraction. These experiments are clear. They prove the repulsion of metallic substances and the attraction of organic substances in the combination MO also. What happens with organic material between two spheres?

O. O, unlike MO, does not oscillate, nor does it stay still like M, but it adheres alternately, and for a considerable time, to one sphere and then to the other. This is accompanied by phenomena which I do not yet understand.

E. Nobody would ask to have every detail of a new experiment clarified all at once.

O. I would like to stress two facts emerging from these experiments particularly:

1. When the movement of the pendulum has already subsided and the spheres are discharged, it can begin again if one touches the connected organometer with one's finger. It reminds one of the lumination with *contact interruption*, but it is not quite understandable yet.

2. If we arrange MO with *one* metal sphere we observe, when we excite the latter, not only a pendulum movement, but also a *rotating* or *torsion* movement of MO. This also is not understandable. But we shall have to keep this rotation in mind; nobody can predict in what connection it will prove significant.

E. You observe very well. I had seen both phenomena but did not mention them. Could it not be a matter of mechanical disturbances?

O. No, for I have been able to reproduce them under different circumstances.

Now, according to the theory of electricity, an electrical charge is transferred by influence from the charged to the *non-charged* body. An amber rod, when rubbed, attracts pieces of paper. Let us transfer this theory to our palm. We must assume it to be charged. But it does not attract the freely suspended metal foil. How do you explain this?

E. I have no explanation for it.

O. Please produce an orgone energy field around the metal sphere so that the tin foil is repulsed from it.

E. Done.

O. Now bring your palm close to the tin foil slowly and remove it again.

E. . . . Every time I bring my hand close, the tin foil approaches my hand and goes back again when I remove it.

O. The charge of your hand has not changed. Your hand exerted no attraction on the tin foil *as long as the tin foil itself was not in an orgone energy field. But as soon as this was the case, the attractive effect of your hand appeared.* If it were a matter of electrical influence, the effect would have had to be present from the beginning. It was not. It appears when *two orgone energy fields*, that of the sphere and that of your hand, come into contact with each other.

E. These phenomena are not understandable from the point of view of electricity. There can be no doubt that orgone is fundamentally different from electricity. A simple logical confirmation of these facts occurs to me. The orgone is present everywhere in the atmosphere and in all substances. It must also be present between the wires of a telephone or high tension conduit. The wires are not insulated. If they were, this would not change anything anyhow, since the orgone penetrates insulating materials. If orgone were simple electricity, there would be conduction between the wires and there would be discharges and electrical disturbances. Telegraph and telephone would be an impossibility. All this is not the case. The orgone, then, does not establish a conduction between the telephone wires, and can therefore, logically, not be electricity.

O. This is a very important critical objection to the thoughtless application of the concept of electricity. If orgone were the same as electricity, insulation by air and insulating materials would indeed

be impossible. I suggest to postpone the discussion of the relationship between orgone and "dielectricity" until another time.

E. I had to think of this relationship myself. It has remained obscure why different insulators act so differently when placed in the field between two condensor plates. The difference of the dielectricity constants is a riddle.

O. We are not yet prepared to discuss this.

E. I see. I begin to realize that your discovery is far more significant for the theory of electricity when one realizes that the orgone is an energy different from electricity.

O. There are many still hidden approaches to the biological energy. Several years of hard experimental work showed me that the current theory of electricity not only failed to provide an avenue of approach to the problem; rather, it always led one astray. This I would like to illustrate with an anecdote: My first biophysical experiments in humans were done in 1935, with the assistance of a physiologist from the Kaiser-Wilhelm-Institut in Berlin. We had to find out whether the erogenous zones of the body surface, when biologically excited, showed an increase of their bio-electrical potential compared with an indifferent place of the body surface. I had already observed the increase of the potential with pleasurable vegetative excitation and asked my assistant to carry out further experiments while I went abroad for a lecture course. When I came back six weeks later, my assistant told me that "nothing had shown" at the erogenous zones, that there was no increase of potential with pleasure, and that therefore my hypothesis was erroneous. I asked him to demonstrate his experimental procedure. For six weeks, with the greatest precision, he had fastened glass cups over the subject's nipples with adhesive tape. The glass cups were

filled with electrolyte fluid and supplied with electrodes which were connected with an oscillograph. Mechanically speaking, the arrangement was faultless, absolutely correct in every detail. Only one fact had been overlooked, and that was the decisive one: *No living organ gives a pleasure reaction if one ties glass cups to it with adhesive tape!*

E. If I understand you correctly, this means that mechanistic methods, taken from the realm of the non-living, are not applicable in the case of phenomena of biological excitation.

O. That, precisely, is my contention. It is based on a great many disappointing experiences. *Living matter functions basically differently from dead matter.* My assistant had excellent training in mechanistic concepts and methods, but he did not know what to do with the biological concept of "emotion" and had no realization of the faultiness of his procedure.

E. That is, you first used mechanistic methods which failed and had to work out new methods which were in keeping with the biological functions?

O. Precisely. But that in itself was not sufficient. Since the *biophysical* laws can be deduced only from the observation of *biological* processes, the *methods* of observation and experiment must also be *biological*. We work with the living organism in order to gain indications of the nature of the orgone energy. On the other hand, we must also work with other material in order to arrive at the *purely physical* orgone functions. Ideally, the orgone-physical experiment should convincingly demonstrate living energy functions. *The biological orgone experiment must agree with the purely physical experiment.*

E. The hypothesis of the two separate electrical fluids, then, led nowhere. The organism does not contain two poles, one charged negatively and the other positively, and there is no equalization be-

tween negative and positive charges.

O. True, there are higher and lower charges. But there is no flow of energy from the higher to the lower charge. On the contrary, the specific biological mechanism is that of an *energy flow from the part with weaker to the part with stronger excitation*. The strongly excited pseudopodium of an ameba attracts plasma from the non-excited parts of the organism. This is what leads to the flowing of the total plasma, the "crawling." There is *lumination* ("excitation," "emotion") which is unipolar and has nothing to do with potential differences. Nor is there any equalization of positive and negative charge.

E. You have replaced the *attraction* of positive and negative electricity and the *repulsion* of positive and positive, negative and negative electricity, respectively, by the antithetical functions of *attraction and repulsion*.

O. The theory of electricity assumes that the antithesis of positive and negative develops from a *neutral* condition. In the living organism, the concept of a neutral condition is not applicable. The living organism is never completely at rest like, say, a dynamo. *The unitary, always functioning biological energy works in two antithetical directions as attraction and as repulsion of the particles in the living plasma or the colloid.* The repulsion of the particles expresses itself as *dissociation* or *expansion*, the attraction as *association* or *contraction*. Orgone biophysics had to demonstrate, *purely physically*, these two antithetical functions of one and the same energy. This demonstration did not succeed until, after innumerable failures, the electrical concepts were discarded and the experiments were carried out purely from the standpoint of biological attraction and repulsion.

E. A piece of leather, a glass rod and a piece of tin, put together on a table, do not mean anything until the searching intel-

lect puts them into some relationship with each other. It is necessary to rub the glass rod with the leather in order to produce a movement of the tin foil.

O. One of the greatest hindrances of research is the fact that science always stops at separate individual facts which it does not really understand. Scientific search is

ing repulsion and attraction (or dissociation and association) of the particles of the living colloid.

When sex-economy began to comprehend the basic pulsatory function of the autonomic life system one was surprised to see how the infinite findings of physiology and biology were without compre-

Field

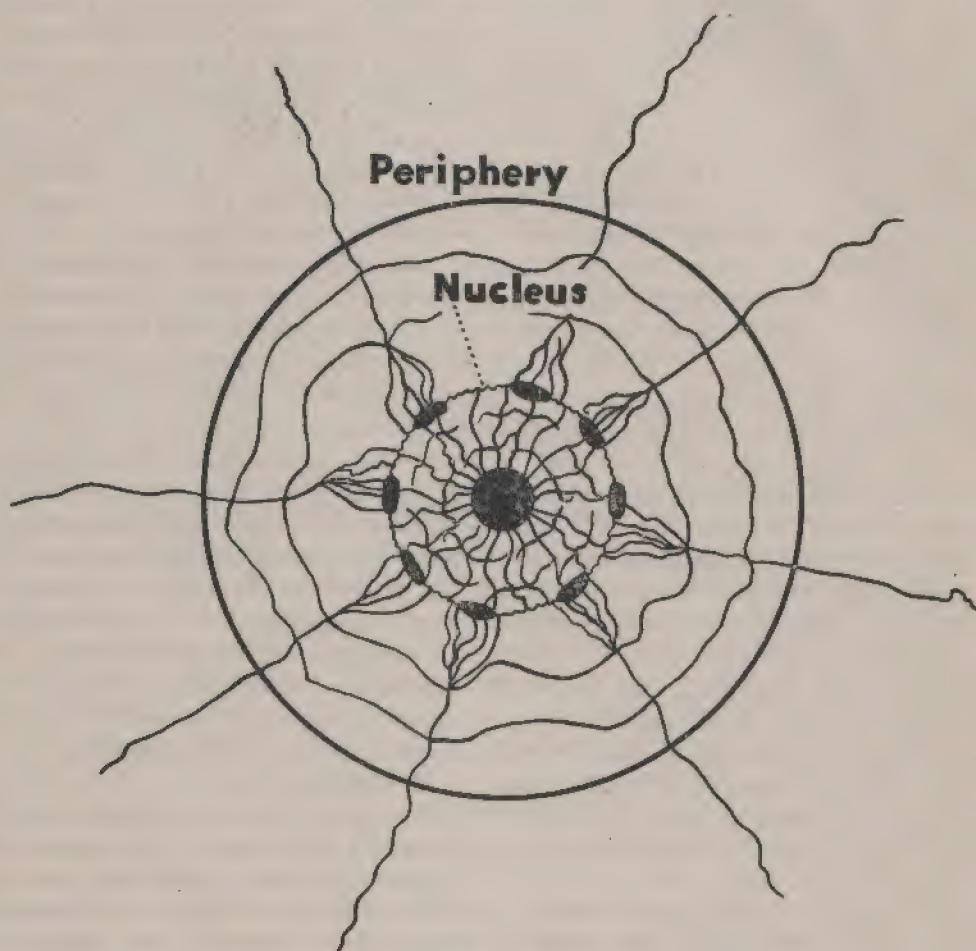


FIG. 9. Schema of organotic system.

essentially the establishing of an intelligible connection between individual facts. *The problem of the biological plasma pulsation reduces itself to an alternating expansion and contraction, that is, alternat-*

hensible connections. As you know, the *formula* of plasmatic functioning, of the four-beat TENSION → CHARGE → DISCHARGE → RELAXATION was not discovered by experiment but by thought. The unification

of the known facts of physiology was later confirmed by the bio-electrical experiments at the erogenous zones.

E. Let's remain with the theory. In order to follow your experiments I have to comprehend your theoretical standpoint. Otherwise I could easily explain away your individual findings by wild individual interpretations.

O. Nothing is easier than to take the individual facts out of their context, to separate them from the basic theory and to find a special "explanation" for every individual fact. For example, if you bring your hand close to the charged electroscope, the leaves collapse; that is "the effect of capacity." If you bring the rubbed rubber rod close, the leaves deflect; that is "the effect of influence." If you connect the electroscope casing with grounded metal the deflection increases; this is "the effect of the negative charge of the earth on the positive charge of the leaves." If one brings the orgone rod close to an electric tube and removes it again, the tube flickers; this is "the effect of ions." If there is a bolt of lightning between cloud and earth, this is a discharge of "positive cloud electricity and negative earth electricity." If, however, there is a bolt of lightning between two clouds, without contact with the earth, lo and behold, suddenly there are clouds not only with positive but also with negative charge. The lightning contains millions of volts while the air contains only traces of electricity. Well, then it was "the effect of the electrical charge of the surface of the droplets" . . .

E. That's enough! I know there is a magic of words which—in physics no less than elsewhere—is taken for scientific explanation. But we want to get at *new facts*.

O. I cannot pass over the magic of words as easily as you. For many years, it was used against me with great dignity and authority at every step I took, until

finally I lost my respect for it and determined to declare orgone research autonomous and independent. When I demonstrated the pulsation of the bions microscopically, it was said to be a matter of "Brownian movement," although this cannot explain the pulsation. The *SAPA* bions which opened the way into the realm of the orgone energy were called "only sarcinae." Character-analysis was called "old stuff" or "all wrong." Vegetotherapy, to which we owe the formula of living functioning, was called "simple massage." With regard to the orgone accumulator, many physicists said that "of course" a metal cabinet was warmer, without substantiating such a statement. That is, one cannot get around the magic of words; one has to overcome it.

E. Let's overcome it by the solution of problems, and by a correct instead of a verbalistic solution. One of these problems is why these phenomena, unequivocal as they are, have not struck any physicist or astronomer thus far.

O. You are mistaken. The atmospheric orgone has been seen and described by hundreds of physicists, astronomers, meteorologists, biologists and chemists. That the orgone was not discovered in a practical way long ago is due to the mechanistic splitting up of the natural sciences, the mechanistic verbalizations which were taken for explanations, and the lack of functional, that is, unitary thinking.

E. I don't get you.

O. One and the same phenomenon, the wave-like flimmering of the atmospheric orgone, has been sighted and described in meteorology as well as in astronomy. Meteorology, observing the atmosphere mainly during the *day*, knows the atmospheric orgone as "blue haze" and "flimmering as a result of evaporating water." Astronomy on the other hand, making its observations mainly at *night*, knows the orgone under the designation of "diffuse light" and as a disturbance in astronomi-

cal observation which is called "bad seeing."

Geologists and physicists know the atmospheric orgone as "flickering in the sky due to terrestrial magnetism." The physicist, in addition, knows the orgone as "static." The astronomers and physicists have experienced the atmospheric orgone mainly as a disturbance. The spontaneous discharge of the electroscope is a natural expression of the atmospheric orgone. The physicist calls it the "natural leak" and *excludes* it because it disturbs his calculations of ion effects. Orgone lumination at the mast of a ship is called "St. Elmo fire"; lumination at the height of some hundred kilometers is called "aurora borealis" but at the height of a few hundred meters it is called "heat lightning." The organotic flickering at the walls of a room is called "merely a subjective optical impression." The blue of the sky, an unequivocal orgone phenomenon, is "merely absorbed blue sunlight." The blue-green coloration of the protoplasm is "merely a phenomenon of refraction." The lumination of fire-flies is merely the luminescence of a substance called "luciferine." The lumination of disintegrating wood in the dark is "merely a phenomenon of putrefaction."

If natural science were not mechanistically split up, if it did not operate, to its great disadvantage, with a plethora of concepts, then the astronomer, the geologist and the meteorologist would long since have arrived at an understanding of the flickering in the atmosphere. The astronomer would have found that the stars in a planetarium also flicker. The physicist, together with the meteorologist, would have found that there are certain laws according to which the spontaneous discharge of the electroscope varies; that, for example, the speed of discharge increases with cloud formation and before rain and decreases with strong sunlight in the afternoon. The triumph of the

new scientific method of *energetic functionalism* was that of having brought together in *one unit* the many separate forms of expression of the cosmic energy. This theoretical comprehension led to the construction of the organotic cabinet, with that to the locally delimited reproduction of the flickering in the atmosphere and, further, to the thermal and electroscopic demonstration of the cosmic energy.

E. This only shows that the theoretical unification of different and widely disparate phenomena leads to new experiments which in turn confirm the theory.

O. The path to the discovery of the orgone was in reality a different one, starting, as it did, from the bionous structure of any substance which has been made to swell. But it might have taken the course you indicated.

E. How about discussing the thermal manifestations of the orgone next time?

O. Gladly.

VI. ORGONOTIC HEAT (MAY 1939-FEBRUARY 1944).

E. I am most curious about your demonstration of organotic heat. There are many gaps in the physical theory of heat. For example, the heat developed by the sun is still not understood. It cannot be simple combustion heat, otherwise the sun would have burned out long since. The sun's loss of mass by radiation amounts to about 4.2×10^{12} gram/sec. This corresponds to about 4,200,000 metric tons, or 1% of its mass in 150,000 million years. The earth alone constantly receives about 2 cal. of heat per cm^2 every minute. In order to understand these gigantic amounts of radiated heat energy one has assumed that it is not a matter of heat from combustion, but of *subatomic heat*, that is, heat from disintegration of matter.

O. Has anybody tried to explain how it is possible that the heat radiated by the sun into the universe does not get lost

on the way to the earth, a distance of about 149 million kilometers, why there is not a rapid equalization with the temperatures of the universe which are near absolute zero?

E. I do not know of any such consideration, but it is undoubtedly important. Have you an opinion about it?

O. The discovery of the orgone has led to some surprising clarifications.

E. I just remembered the fact that you can easily charge your orgonometer through exposure to sunlight to the amount of many hundred volts. That must mean that the sun radiates orgone energy directly to the earth. It is *orgone energy and not heat which manifests itself at the orgonometer*. As we know, heat is only a *form of manifestation of energy* anyhow, and not energy itself. But I cannot as yet think of a connection between orgone and heat. As you have found out, orgone penetrates all substances. In caloric research, one finds always the same thing: all temperature differences result in an equalization from the higher to the lower temperature which takes place more or less fast or slowly according to the conductivity of the substances involved. Since, now, the orgone is present everywhere, only in different concentrations, one should have found such differences, which is not the case.

O. The demonstration of such irregularities in the equalization of temperature succeeds only if one imitates, in miniature, the arrangement of materials of a planet such as our earth. Then one finds indeed a *constant temperature difference without a constant source of heat of any known kind*.

E. I was prepared for all kinds of surprises, but this would really be a bomb-shell.

O. I am afraid that when this "bomb-shell" is going to explode, many a physicist will dig in behind an impenetrable

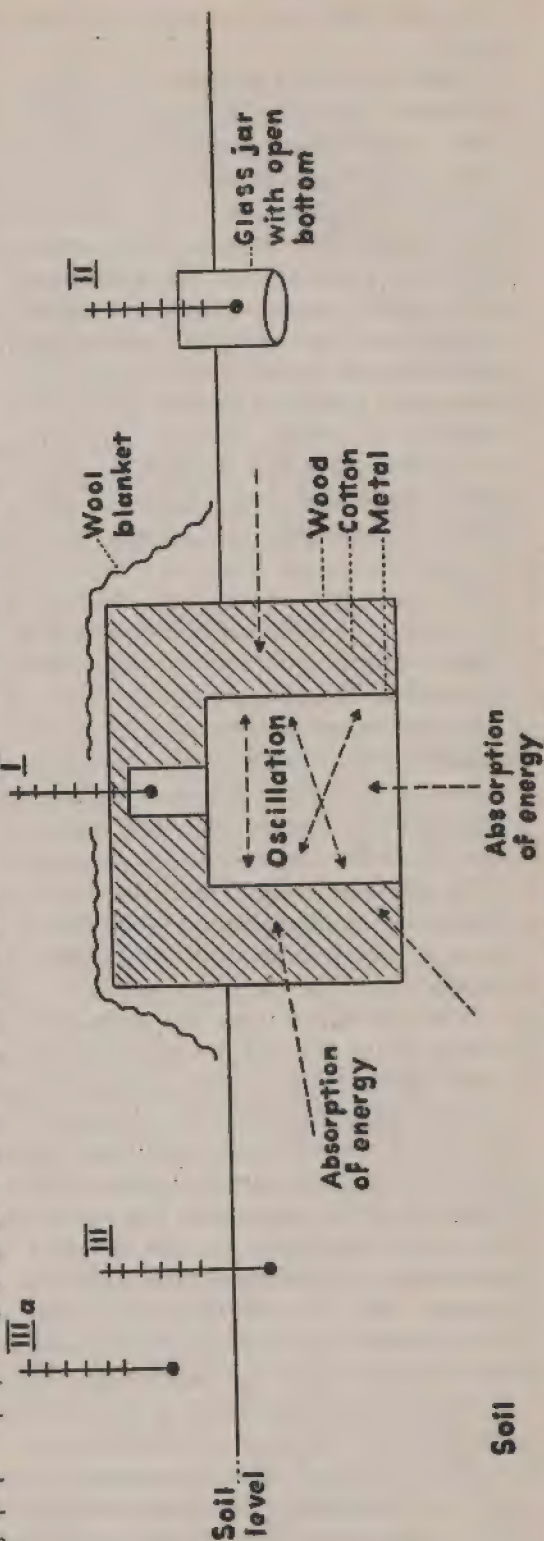


Fig. 10. Measurement of To-T in the open air.

wall of "interpretations" which are to explain the phenomenon away.

E. You are too pessimistic.

O. I am speaking from experience. But first let us convince ourselves that the rule of the equalization of all temperature differences is correct. Here are four very exact decimal thermometers. Please put their points about 2 inches below the surface of the soil. You may choose shady or sunny spots; the thermometer *tips* are protected from direct sunlight in either case.

E. I prefer a sunny spot . . . The four thermometers show the same temperature.

O. Now we bury this apparatus in the soil. The apparatus consists of an exterior box of wood and an interior box of sheet iron of 1 cubic foot. It is a good idea to use an apparatus consisting of two or three such layers. In the top of the box we insert a glass cylinder which has a small opening for the insertion of a thermometer. The whole thing is covered with soil so that the apparatus itself is not exposed to the direct sun rays. Will you measure the temperatures?

E. . . . The box thermometer shows a far higher temperature than the other thermometers. At present the difference is 9°C .

O. This is April, and the sun is not very high. In summer, we find temperature differences up to 20 degrees. Let us call these differences $To-T$. It is that temperature above the average soil temperature which is produced by our arrangement of materials. Since the sun radiation is the same in the whole field of the experiment, the temperature difference can only be the result of the arrangement of materials.

E. . . . The sky has become overcast. The temperature difference decreases gradually . . . Now it is only 2°C .

O. Before and during a heavy rain, it

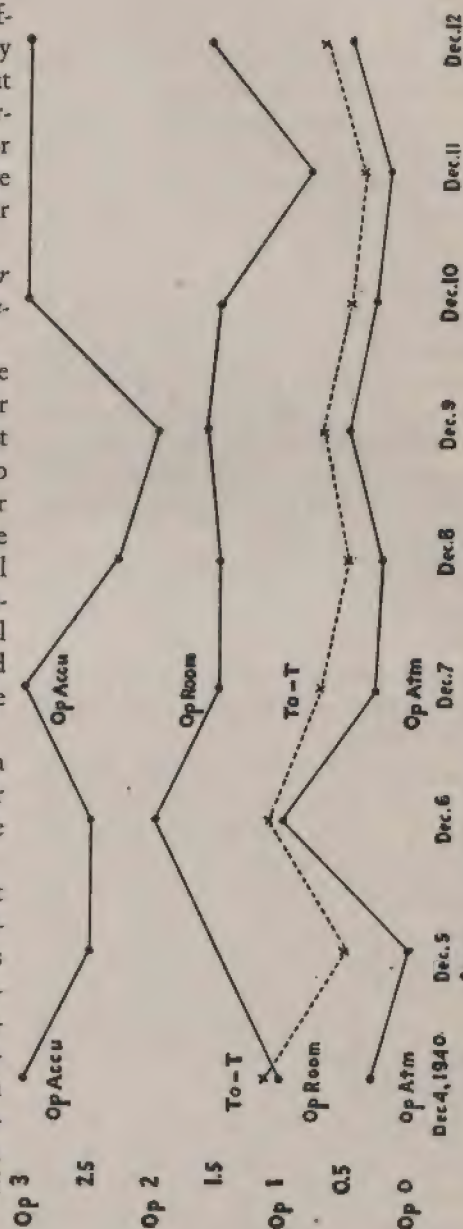


FIG. 11. Measurements of the atmospheric orgone in the open air, in the orgone accumulator and in the orgone room, and $To-T$. (Op 1 corresponds to $To-T = 1^{\circ}\text{C}$.)

decreases to very low values such as 0.1° – 0.4°C . It is much smaller at night than during the day. It increases toward noon and again decreases toward sunset. In other words, we find the same daily variations as in the curve of the orgone tension. *The curve of the temperature difference runs more or less parallel to the tension curve of the atmospheric orgone.*

E. I have an objection. The control thermometers are in contact with the soil, while the orgone thermometer measures the temperature of the air in the soil above the apparatus. I am going to put a piece of rubber hose around the tips of the control thermometers in order to create the same condition as above the apparatus . . . *The result remains the same. The thermometer inside the orgone accumulator shows a temperature several degrees lower than the thermometer above the upper metal surface.*

O. When I told an eminent physicist about this fact he declared it to be impossible. *The temperature within the orgone accumulator is always lower than above its upper surface.* This fact is difficult to explain.

E. I am going to bury a simple wooden box in the same way as the metal apparatus . . . *The temperature above the wooden box is the same as within; it is only about 0.2°C . higher than that of the control thermometers.* In this experimental set-up, then, metal behaves quite differently from organic material. As far as I know, such a phenomenon is unknown in physics, and I certainly could not explain it.

O. Individual findings remain as unintelligible in the realm of orgone physics as in other realms of physics. For example, you could not explain the deviation of the compass needle in the electrical field without a knowledge of other electrical facts and of the corresponding theory. We have already encountered a fact which explains the temperature dif-

ference between above and below the metal surface just as it explains the disappearance of the temperature difference if we use organic material alone.

E. Oh yes, our cork piece is attracted by the orgone-charged metal sphere while the tin foil is repulsed.

O. You have established the right connection. *Organic substances attract and absorb the orgone, metallic substances reflect it.* The functions of the orgone become comprehensible not so much through individual findings as through *the connection of seemingly widely disparate facts.* One would not immediately surmise a connection between this temperature phenomenon and the phenomenon of attraction and repulsion. The temperature phenomenon and the electroscope phenomenon are in accord: metals stop the kinetic energy of the orgone. True, organic substances also stop the orgone particles, but this effect is almost completely counteracted by the absorption on the part of organic substances. *As everywhere where kinetic energy is stopped, the stopping of the kinetic energy by metallic substances expresses itself as heat.* Since heat ascends, it is clear why the temperature above the upper metal surface of the apparatus is higher than that of the inside, and why both accumulator temperatures are higher than those of the control thermometers.

E. I am going to repeat this experiment above the soil surface. I shall put the apparatus on the ground, measure the temperature of the enclosed space above it and compare it with the air temperature in the shade. The tip of the orgone thermometer is also in the shade.

O. If you compare with the air temperature in the sun, the fundamental result will be the same.

E. . . . The orgone thermometer in the open air above the ground shows a difference of about 10 degrees compared with the air temperature in the shade and

about 8 degrees compared with the air temperature in the sun. In other words, *To-T is always positive*. This is indeed a bombshell: a constant temperature difference without an apparent constant source of heat!

O. That cannot be the case. True, there is no visible or artificial source of heat besides the sun radiation. But of course there must be a source of heat, or else we would have discovered the principle of the perpetuum mobile. *The source of heat of the temperature difference is the stopping of the orgone radiation by the metal.* We use no artificial, mechanical or chemical energy. The energy of the metal in stopping the kinetic energy of the orgone radiation is of a passive nature, consisting simply of the existence of the material resistance. The same kind of passive mechanical energy is consumed when a meteor hits the surface of the earth, resulting in light and heat. The high temperature difference at the orgone accumulator is due to the kinetic energy of the flying energy particles. What is consumed, then, is the kinetic energy of the orgone which, in being stopped, is transformed into heat. *Since, however, the available amounts of orgone are, practically speaking, infinite, the amount of energy transformed into heat is negligible,* and the observer gains the impression of heat production "out of nothing," that is, of a perpetuum mobile.

This fact always creates difficulties in the demonstration of the orgone. The observer, in seeing the temperature, always looks for a source of heat of a known nature, unless he is ready with an arbitrary interpretation. One observer, when I demonstrated the biological effect of a simple wood-metal cabinet to him, began to look for hidden wires and electrical connections because without them it seemed incomprehensible. Only time and experience will acquaint the observers with the fact that the orgone is present everywhere,

that it can be concentrated in a specific manner and that in this way it develops its physical and biological effects.

E. These facts are amazing, your interpretation simple and plausible; I suppose you have not just thought it out.

O. Indeed not. It resulted from the combination of innumerable small findings in the course of years of constant and painstaking observation. All the more peculiar is the attitude of "critical" onlookers who see this or that individual finding and immediately try to do away with it with a word or a wild interpretation. An eminent physicist thought it "quite obvious" that the temperature above the metal should be higher. Why it should be "quite obvious" he failed to say.

E. You were going to tell me about an interesting experience.

O. Yes. I had been observing the temperature difference in my basement laboratory since 1939. In closed rooms, it is rarely higher than 1.5°C ., apparently because the orgone radiation from the walls and from objects in the room is too strong. I presented my finding to a man who is a great authority in physics. At that time I did not yet know about the results of measuring the temperature in the open air because I had discovered the atmospheric orgone energy only a short time before. The physicist patiently listened to my story in the course of a four to five hours' conversation. The fact that the temperature above my accumulator was several degrees higher than inside he considered impossible. The difference between the box temperature and the room temperature—if true—he considered, like you, a "bombshell." He expressed the wish to observe the apparatus for some weeks. I put one on a table in his basement. The control thermometer I suspended freely in the room, at the same height. He convinced himself in my presence of the temperature difference and observed its constant existence over a period of two

weeks. He had promised me to support the orgone research if he could confirm the existence of the temperature difference. Now he had confirmed it. Then he called in an assistant. The assistant soon found "an explanation." The temperature difference, he opined, was due to "convection of heat from the room ceiling to the table top." If his interpretation had not been irrational, he would, of course, have convinced himself of its correctness or incorrectness by conscientious experimentation. All he would have had to do was to put the control thermometer at the same height with the orgone thermometer *above* the table top. This would have shown him that the temperature difference continued to exist and that his argument was incorrect. His chief took the trouble of taking the apparatus apart and found a temperature difference between above and below the table top. This phenomenon was well-known to me. It is explained by the stopping of the soil orgone radiation at the lower side of the table top and has nothing to do with the temperature above the apparatus. If one interrupts the convection of heat from the room ceiling and replaces the wooden table top by a metal one, thus eliminating the difference, the phenomenon To-T nevertheless continues to exist. Of these measures, the high authority in physics did not think. The simplest procedure, of course, was that of excluding all heat influences as may exist in a room and to measure *in the open air* as we just did. This excludes room ceilings as well as table tops.

E. The superficiality of this assistant is amazing. After all, that's no way of dealing with a gigantic problem. How did it come out?

O. As usual. I refuted the assistant's interpretation by the measurements in the open air, where not only the objection is eliminated but where the phenomenon is even more marked. I submitted the results

of these new measurements to the physicist but never received an answer. I never quite understood this but I cannot help feeling that this man, who had understood my problems and findings very well, simply wanted to keep aloof in order not to engage himself although he must be convinced of the correctness of my findings.

E. That must have been a bad blow.

O. That it was. I had to think of the many great and small discoveries which, in less robust characters, are done away with in this manner only to be newly discovered, or, rather, to be stolen, by others. This physicist, by the way, immediately saw the radiation when he looked through the organoscope, but later he felt incapable of quite distinguishing his subjective eye phenomena from the radiation. The organotic lumination of gases such as argon was at that time as yet unknown to me.

E. That was a dangerous situation there. Your cause might easily have been smashed.

O. No, for my refutation of the objection was unequivocal. In addition, there are too many tangible and proven facts, and there are too many gaps in physics which cannot be bridged without orgone physics.

E. Do you find a connection with the so-called "radiation of black bodies"? They absorb all the colors of the spectrum, which are reflected by white bodies. The soil contains heat which might be absorbed by your apparatus.

O. In order to refute this objection, all orgone boxes are painted white on the outside, as you see.

E. The heat at your orgone accumulator, produced by the stopping of energy, would seem to explain the heat of the sun and the earth. If the orgone is that energy which results from the disintegration of matter; if, further, orgone heat results from the stopping of the kinetic energy of the orgone; then the heat of the

sun could be simply explained as "orgone heat" as it results from the disintegration of matter at a temperature of about 6000 degrees.

O. Our little orgone system in the soil easily produces 10°C. of "orgone heat," that is, the difference $T_0 - T$. On the basis of these facts, the sun heat is no longer a riddle. The heat produced in the inside of the earth also becomes understandable. It is assumed that the inside of the earth consists of "incandescent material." The heat of the interior of the earth cannot be simply combustion heat, for chemical combustion requires immense amounts of oxygen. If this oxygen were taken from the atmosphere, the available supply would soon be exhausted. In addition, it cannot be assumed that the interior of the earth is in connection with the atmospheric oxygen. The interior of the earth consists of "magma," an undefined, incandescent substance. Its existence cannot be doubted, for two reasons: First, the temperature goes up considerably toward the interior of the earth, about 1°C. for every 30 meters of depth. Second, the interior of the earth must be incandescent if the geological explanation of the origin of our planet from incandescent star material is correct. Since we must exclude chemical combustion we can only assume that the interior of the earth, too, develops orgone energy which in turn produces orgone heat. Finally, we must assume, on the basis of these facts, that what the sun sends to the earth is *not heat, but orgone energy*, no matter how obscure the mechanism of this process is. The assumption of direct heat radiation from the sun to the earth is incompatible with the almost absolute zero temperature in the universe, anyhow.

E. This opens the question as to the relationship between orgone and light. Do your experiments provide any clues?

O. Many observations point to the existence of such connections, but I am not

ready to say anything about it. The fact that light is identical with electromagnetic waves leads to another question which is as yet not answered experimentally. The motion of waves always requires a medium in which it can take place. Water waves are unthinkable without water, sound waves without air. In order to make it possible for waves to move, the medium must vibrate. As far as I know nobody has explained in what medium light rays, coming from the sun to the earth, move. The fact of the transmission of light rays, that is, of electromagnetic waves of light character, cannot be doubted. For the time being we must assume that the orgone is the medium in which the electromagnetic waves of light vibrate. This seems a justified hypothesis and not a "wild" one. The motion of the radio waves, also, is to be ascribed to the orgone.

E. In order to decide the question, one would have to know whether and how the orgone extends beyond the atmosphere of the earth, whether there is, so to speak, an *orgone bridge* from the sun to the earth. It might be much denser near the sun and the earth than in the intervening space. That would in no way exclude the possibility of its being the medium which carries the light waves. At any rate, this idea provides a basis on which the light medium might finally be comprehended.

O. Arrhenius assumes a cone which extends from the sun to the earth and beyond it into space. This cone was made responsible for the zodiac light also; it was conceived as "consisting of particles of matter." If you look through the orgonoscope, you see moving light particles. It is difficult to arrive at a clear picture. We are often forced to fill gaps in our knowledge with assumptions which later may prove erroneous. That the orgone is in motion is a definitely established fact. This motion is seen in the flickering in the sky and on objects. Certainly, the

orgone does not stay still like the water in a puddle. Furthermore, the motion seems to be of the nature of a *rhythmic* pulsation, again reminding one of the wave. In the orgonoscope, we see plainly moving light particles, and orgone heat is apparently produced by the mechanical stopping of this orgone motion. A good telescope clearly shows the wave-like motion of the atmospheric orgone at a magnification of as little as 60x.

E. I am reminded here of the body temperature of animals which, in warm-blooded animals, is usually higher than the temperature of the air. If you don't mind jumping from one special field to another: *is animal heat also orgone heat?*

O. Since the orgone is a cosmic, or rather, *the* cosmic energy, it is not surprising that our discussion should lead us often abruptly from one specialty to the other. You are right: the organism contains orgone. The orgone in the body is in constant motion which is again and again stopped at innumerable places. This is apparently the way in which animal orgone heat is produced. The problem of the production of animal heat thus finds a simple explanation. If heavy work is done, more orgone is in motion and more is stopped; consequently, more heat is *produced*. *The heat production in the organism follows*

the same laws as the production of sun heat. It becomes understandable why life depends on the sun. Both systems function orgonotically. Both form "orgonotic systems."

E. It seems to me that the bombshell of the orgone heat did not burst until this moment.

O. The simplest is always the most amazing. It would be premature to try to comprehend the biological orgone phenomena before the foundations of experimental and theoretical orgone *physics* are established. Although the principle of orgonotic pulsation is derived from the realm of the living, nevertheless, it must be confirmed in the realm of non-living nature before it can be utilized for an understanding of life. Unless we proceed cautiously, there might well arise a few generations of mystics who conceive of the orgone metaphysically, divorced from non-living nature and who do not comprehend it from the standpoint of natural science. And it seems to me that we have more than enough mysticism as it is.

E. Right. What do you suggest for our next discussion?

O. The phenomena of orgonotic attraction in relation to magnetism.

[To be continued]

THE "LIVING PRODUCTIVE POWER, WORKING POWER" OF KARL MARX*

By WILHELM REICH, M.D.

INTRODUCTION.

This article was written in 1936, at a time when the sociological illusions in the Soviet Union were put into the form of a constitution ("Introduction of Soviet Democracy"). At that time, it was not published. If it is published now, 8 years later, it is mainly for two reasons:

1. Humanity is more in need of scientific, that is, *truthful* thinking than ever before. Armed disputes will not change its misery an iota. Even after the military victory over German fascism, the fascist human structure will continue to exist in Germany, Russia, America and everywhere else. It will continue to grow subterraneously, will seek new forms of political organization and will inevitably lead to a new catastrophe, unless the responsible people all over the world will rally to protect and utter truth as today only the political lie is protected and uttered. This can be predicted with absolute certainty.

Karl Marx discovered vital facts with far-reaching social consequences, but the realization of these consequences is not possible because knowledge and technique are not sufficiently developed to bring about a correspondingly rapid change in human emotional structure. One may welcome or condemn Marx; that is a matter of taste. What one cannot do, however, if one lays any claim to decency, is to refer to Marx and at the same time to distort his scientific facts in the interest of political manoeuvres. One cannot distort scientific truths without becoming sooner or later an accomplice of fascism, the master of distortion and lying. Even though the alteration of human conditions

according to scientific findings is not possible, the misery of daily living should not lead one to smash the only hope of humanity, which lies in rational truth.

Ten years ago or so one was severely brought to task if one did not adhere to the letter of Marx's writings; one was condemned for the scientific statement that Marxist economy was in urgent need of being complemented by a scientific mass psychology. Yet recently, Marxism was "revised" in Soviet Russia. Official government economists "discovered" that Marx was wrong in contending that in socialism there would be no production and accumulation of surplus value, that, in other words, the production of surplus value was a specific characteristic of capitalism.

The distortion of the facts is the following: *Nowhere in Marx's economic theory is to be found the contention that in socialism the production of surplus value would cease to exist.* To "revise" a contention which was never made is nonsense.

The fundamental problem of Marx was not *whether or not* surplus value is produced in socialism; the problem was *the nature* of the surplus value, the question *where it comes from* and *who disposes of it*. Surplus value is produced on the basis of the specific character of *living working power*. The core of Marx's economics is the fundamental difference between living and dead productive power.

From the finding of the *nature* of living working power, and with that of the *origin* of surplus value, follows the further question who *appropriates* the surplus value. *It is always appropriated by the*

* Translated by the Editor.

owners of the social means of production: in private capitalism by the individual capitalists, in state capitalism by the state, and in a free work democracy by the society of the working individuals, as historically in primitive societies and as foreseen in a future truly democratic society.

One may welcome these findings or one may hate them, but it is not admissible to distort them. To shift the problem of the production of surplus value from the questions of its *nature, origin and appropriation* to the question of its *existence* is an inadmissible distortion of a scientific finding. The exposition which follows has nothing to do with any kind of political ideology but only and alone with the vital interest in the protection of scientific integrity. In these times, it is not superfluous to point out that such scientific problems cannot be solved by firing squads, these most modern means of settling differences.

2. The second reason for the publication of this article at this time is the connection between Marx's analysis of living working power in the production of surplus value and the orgone-physical study of human biological activity. Since about 1928, sex-economy has been aware of the fact that what Marx calls living working power is identical with what orgone biophysics calls *work function of the biological energy*. Particularly at this time, it is a matter of profound human and scientific gratification that a thinker and searcher of the stature of Marx made a specific life function the core of his "dry" economic theory. He was the first to do so, for which working humanity owes him gratitude. That humanity almost let him starve; that it continues to smear him; that it begins to impute things to him which he never said; that it appropriates his practical scientific discoveries without giving him credit; all this adds another heavy debt to an already gigantic

debt account of this humanity. It is not the fault of Marx. I felt it my scientific duty to set straight what an almost incomprehensible social mentality tries to distort and obliterate.

Orgonon, July, 1944.

Karl Marx was for the science of economics what Freud was for psychiatry. His basic concept was simple and at variance with all traditional views. Pre-Marxian and non-Marxian economics tried to explain profit from the "natural value" of dead material, from the existing and invested capital, etc. The economists before Marx had contended that the value of commodities was determined by the law of supply and demand. Marx showed that this produces no more than slight price fluctuations, and that the value of a commodity is basically determined by the *human working power* invested in it. A tree, e.g., has no "value" in itself, i.e., not until human work is "added to it." Not until the tree is felled and sawed into boards or made into masts does it assume "value" for man. This applies to everything which has "value." The air has no "value"; it is obtained gratis, because it can be consumed without the addition of human working power. The hide of an ox has no value until human hands fashion it into shoes.

Marx distinguishes the constant from the variable capital. The *constant* capital consists of non-living raw materials and non-living machines. These, in themselves, give no profit; not until human work, the *variable capital*, changes them into commodities, into use values. Since money can be lent for interest, the *value* of the capital seemed to be determined by the fact that it brought in more money, be it through investment in industry (industrial capital) or through lending (bank capital). According to Marx, money is no more than a paper issued on the basis of a social agreement, for the facilitation of

trade. In itself, it has no more value than the working power which was expended in its manufacture. Its actual value it derives only from what it represents, from what it can be exchanged for, as, e.g., a commodity. However, one buys not only dead commodities, but also *living* commodities. The entrepreneur pays the worker for the use of the "commodity, working power." This working power can be sold and bought like any other commodity. When a shoemaker makes a pair of shoes and sells them, they no longer belong to him. Neither does the working power which, say, a lathe worker sells to the capital owner. Just as the buyer of the shoes can do with the *use value* of the shoes what he pleases, so can the entrepreneur do what he pleases with the *commodity, working power* which he has bought; he can exploit it as he pleases. In doing so, he is not "bad"; he acts, according to the laws of market economy, altogether legally.

The effect of the emotional plague on Marx's scientific theory of value expresses itself in the following manner: In their attempt to arouse the emotions of the masses and to win them over, the party politicians forgot about the unemotional explanation of the value of working power. They attached to the factual concept of "surplus value" an emotion composed of resentment, hatred, envy and the urge to pocket surplus value oneself. Thus the fruitful and promising objective findings of Marx got lost in a heap of irrational emotions which not only led to no practical result but brought ruin to the whole workers' movement. True, the emotional plague is able to win masses, to conquer nations, to destroy populations; but it is unable to take one single constructive measure for the improvement of economic misery. Scientific fact-finding corresponds to the biological mastery of obstacles which are in the way of unfolding life. There can be no dictatorship over the

growth of trees. True, the emotional plague can shoot to pieces, burn or otherwise destroy millions of trees. But one cannot prescribe to a tree how fast and how much it should grow. On the other hand, scientific research into the laws of tree-growth can provide the means of preventing damage to trees, of improving the *conditions* under which trees grow faster and better.

This example shows clearly the biological function of natural science as contrasted with the destructive function of every kind of emotional plague: What political groups, in Europe and America, fight as "Marxism" has nothing to do with Marx's economic teachings. Similarly, the various "Marxist" parties of today have nothing in common with Marx's science.

Marx defined the concept of *capitalist* scientifically. A capitalist is not, as commonly assumed, a man who has a great deal of money, but a man who, based on the laws of market economy, can *use his money to buy and utilize the working power of others*. If I am a well-trained physician, if I develop a successful therapeutic method and have good therapeutic results, I will have many patients. They pay me for my time, i.e., for the value of my working power. In order to do my work, I must continue to re-create my working power, that is, I must have food, clothes, a house, etc. This represents a part of my working power. But this alone would not be sufficient to do my special work. It takes, in addition, a specific training which costs work and money. In addition, continuous work is needed for further training, etc. This takes instruments, etc., in which other workers, in turn, have expended their working power. The patient, then, pays for all the working power, not only my own, which is expended in my work with him; he pays with a conventional value-substitute, with "money," which enables me in turn to buy the results of the working power of

others, such as food, clothing, instruments, etc., that is, use values. As long as I work *myself* I am not a capitalist, no matter how much money I may earn. If, however, I were to employ, say, four physicians at a monthly salary of two hundred dollars and would let them treat patients for me, thus exploiting their working power for 8 hours a day, *then* I would be a capitalist. In that case, I would "exploit" the working power of *others*, that is, I would appropriate it in the form of money. By myself I could treat 8 patients a day and thus earn, say, 800 dollars in 25 working days. Four physicians, however, could earn four times as much; that is, 3200 dollars. I would have to pay the four physicians a total monthly salary of 800 dollars, but I would pocket the 3200 dollars for which they worked. Thus I would have made 2400 dollars *without having worked myself*, by the exploitation of others' working power. According to the laws of market economy, I would not be a swindler, but would act entirely within the law. Nobody could sue or reproach me.

It is Marx's great merit to have disclosed the secret of the *living* commodity, working power, its dual character, and the difference between the *exchange value* and the *use value* of the commodity, working power. A pair of shoes are not a *use* object for the one who produces them, but only an *exchange* object. If he does not want to use them himself, he may exchange them for meat, cloth or money. He will receive the approximate equivalent of the value of the working power expended in their manufacture. Working power is measured in *average* working time. The buyer, however, does not buy the shoes as exchange value, but as use value. He needs them for the *satisfaction of a need*, in this case, for the protection of his feet. He is entitled to receive, in the form of the use of the shoes, the *total* exchange value of the shoes, as paid

by him in meat, cloth or money. In *dead* commodities, the exchange value and the use value are *identical*. In them, human working power is represented. It is different, however, with the only *living* commodity, the commodity, working power, for the very reason that it is a living power. Here, exchange value and use value are *not* identical. Here, the *use value is much higher than the exchange value*.

Every kind of worker, that is, one who creates use values, sells his commodity, working power, to the entrepreneur, according to the same laws of market economy as the shoemaker sells a pair of shoes. The working individual must "re-create" his working power, by eating, keeping himself dressed and housed. In order to do so he must work, say, three hours a day, if we measure the value of food, clothing and housing in terms of the average work which is necessary for the reproduction of the working power. According to the laws of market economy, these three hours represent the *exchange* value of his working power. The capitalist, then, does not cheat the worker when he pays him the exchange value of his commodity, working power, the value of three hours' daily work. For according to the laws of market economy, human working power is a saleable commodity like any other. But the buyer of the commodity, working power, say, a manufacturer, uses the working power of the worker not three hours a day—that is, in the value of the hours of work necessary to reproduce the working power—but 8 or 10 hours. That means, the worker *expends the use value* of his working power, which is *far higher* (8 hours of work) than the exchange value paid to him (3 hours). *The difference between the low exchange value (3 hours' working time) and the far higher use value (8 hours' working time) of the commodity, working power, represents the profit in market economy.* If a wealthy buyer of

working power buys the working power of thousands or tens of thousands of workers, he utilizes its use value that many times over its exchange value. For now a thousand or ten thousand workers, by adding their working power a thousand or ten thousand times, change dead material, dead capital, into commodities.

Their work is collective, but the appropriation of the commodities is individual ("capitalist"). If a shoemaker, in his own shop, produces two pairs of shoes a day he receives the exchange value of two pairs of shoes. If, by using machines, he produces ten pairs a day, he can get the exchange value of ten pairs of shoes. If, however, he works in a shoe factory, which continues to improve its machinery, he receives, in spite of increased production of use values, a wage which does not exceed the exchange value of his working power. For this is still three hours of working time. The utilization of his working power by the entrepreneur has remained about the same, but the "exploitation" has increased, for now the exchange values (use values) of the commodity which he produces has increased considerably.

The working individual does not dispose of the product of his work. He continues to sell his commodity, working power, at the market price (3 hours' working time). *Every one who lives by selling his working power is a worker. Every one who buys the exchange value of the commodity, working power, and exploits its use value, on the virtue of the differential between the exchange value and the use value of the living working power, is a capitalist in Marx's sense.* On the basis of Marxian principles it would be wrong to make the capitalist responsible for the exploitation of the people who create values. It is not the individual capitalist or the class of capitalists who are to be "blamed," as the narrow-minded socialist believes. The essence of the exploitation

lies in the essence of a *society* which is based on market economy and which is split into economic classes. It is this society which enables individuals to acquire—in one way or another—sufficient capital to buy the working power of others and thus pocket the difference between the exchange value and the use value of working power. The economic defraudation of the working individuals lies in the capitalistic *conditions of production*, and not in human intentions.

In order to understand natural work democracy, it is indispensable to understand the following contradiction in the thinking and in the propaganda of the Marxist parties: On the one hand, they had a *purely economistic* orientation; they completely excluded from consideration the character structure of people as they are. More than that, they fought violently against the inclusion of character structure in the fight for genuine democracy. On the other hand, however, Marxist propaganda operated not with the "material" facts of biological and social existence, but essentially with secondary, neurotic drives such as hatred, envy, lust for power, etc. This statement will undoubtedly offend many Marxist party followers. It is not my intention to offend anybody, but only to point out facts which helped to bring about the catastrophe.

I would like to illustrate the difference between the attitude of Marxist party politicians on the one hand and work-democratic endeavor on the other by a simple example from medical practice. If I am presented with a neurotic child suffering from insomnia and learning difficulties, it will soon be obvious that the neurosis was produced by a wrong kind of education on the part of the neurotic mother. Now, it would be completely useless to condemn the neurotic mother moralistically or to provoke the child's hatred against the mother. My finding that the neurosis is due to the harmful

educational influence of the mother has only *one* function, that of *eliminating the child's neurosis*. This finding enables me to help. Without this knowledge, or by arousing the child's hatred, or by showing revolutionary moral indignation, I would not be able to help either the child or the mother. The neurotic mother who made her child neurotic in turn is not "bad," not a "suppressor" or an "exploiter" of infantile helplessness. She is the *tool* and, together with her child, the *victim* of an *unfortunate sex-sociological situation in society*.

The same thing applies to the "exploiting capitalist" and the "exploited wage worker." To arouse the hatred of the worker against the capitalist, to kindle envy, to incite to murder, to inveigh against the capitalists, etc., *will not in the least change the law of the market economy of private capitalism or state capitalism*. This law states: "I, the capital owner (be it state or individual) pay you, the worker, peasant, technician, scientist, etc., 30 or 50 dollars a week, in order to enable you to take care of the food, clothing and housing needs of yourself and your family, in other words, to enable you to reproduce your commodity, working power. You, in turn, sell to me your commodity, working power, for 8 hours a day, regardless of the exchange value (use value) of the commodities produced by you in these 8 hours, regardless of the fact that this exchange value may be three or five times that of what you must produce in one day to support yourself and your family." The capital owner as well as the wage earner enter their mutual relationship not of their own free will and cannot change it at their will. They are both the objects of a certain social condition which functions *independently of their wills and based on a historical development* and which governs *them both*.

Whether or not the reader will understand the development of sex-economic

sociology and mass psychology depends on whether he will be able to approach Marx's analysis of the laws of market economy not ethically or moralistically, not emotionally, but factually and scientifically. It is a matter of *facts* and *laws of functioning*, not of ideals and postulates. Actual endeavors can only stem from the finding of actual facts.

One of the main reasons for the chaotic misery in which humanity finds itself again and again is that the politicians build their ideals and goals not on facts, but on mostly irrational emotional valuations. Everybody who knows my writings knows that I have always been on the side of the emotions, but *only of emotions and goals based on actual facts*; I have always fought against illusionary and irrational goals and ideals.

The finding of the law of market economy and of the peculiar contradiction inherent in the living commodity, working power (exchange value is less than use value, in contradistinction to the dead commodity where exchange value equals use value), is a scientific finding; it is neither good nor bad, it is merely *true*. It has nothing to do with ethics or morals. The capitalist who pays for the exchange value of the working power and utilizes its far higher use value does not act out of malicious intent. Personally, he may be a scoundrel or a kindly man. Usually, he does not even know the mechanism to which he owes his wealth. He is himself enmeshed in the process, he is himself subject to all the consequences of the law of market economy, such as the competition with other concerns, the course of economic crises, etc.

I am neither fighting nor defending the capitalist. I am ready to admit that, personally, I do not like the character of the typical capitalist whose whole thinking, feeling and action is concentrated on making money, in whom financial power replaces natural love, who is an artist when

it comes to taking and a nit-wit when it comes to giving, who is incapable of comprehending the joy in giving. But such a personal dislike should not keep one from distinguishing the human characteristics of an individual capitalist from the laws of market economy the functionary of which he has become by heritage or his own efforts.

I may say that I consider the discovery of this law of economics one of the greatest achievements of human thinking. True, the law of market economy was discovered and exemplified by Marx in terms of the last 300 years of capitalistic machine civilization. But it reaches much farther back, to the early history when society increasingly ceased to produce use values and proceeded to produce exchange values, that is, "commodities." With that, natural economy based on the exchange of goods developed into "money economy." At the same time, sex-affirmation, which guaranteed a natural regulation of the sexual energies, turned into sex-negation and the emotional plague.¹ The discovery of Marx has changed the face of society as a whole. It has made thousands of economists and sociologists conscious of what has become modern socio-economics. There are innumerable economists and sociologists who never read Marx or even refute him but who, nevertheless, wherever they work factually, are deeply influenced by Marx's economics and sociology. It was not Ricardo or Smith but Marx who brought the laws of modern technical development into general consciousness. The many liberal and socialist organizations would never have been able to keep in step with this development had they not been — consciously or unconsciously — under the influence of Marx's sociology. I know from experience that there are many responsible capitalists who hold Marxian economics in high esteem and

understand them better than ever so many socialist party politicians.

Understandably enough, Marx left serious gaps in his sociology. First of all, he lacked the knowledge of *man's biological anchoring*, of his being determined by his instincts. In the place of this knowledge, the party politicians put unscientific ethical concepts, freedom slogans and formal, bureaucratic "freedom organizations." I do not know how many economists in the Soviet Union are aware of the fact that, according to the strict definitions of Marx's theory of value, Russian economy is still governed by market economy, with its conflict between exchange value and use value of working power, with its inevitable exploitation of human working power. It makes no difference whether it is the "state" or the "capitalist" who does the exploiting. What matters is whether he determines society who *creates* the surplus value which results from the differential between exchange value and use value of working power, or he who merely makes use of it, be it "state" or "capitalist."

"State" and "society" mean two basically different social facts. There is a state which is above or against society, as best exemplified in the fascist totalitarian state. There is a society without a state, as in the primitive democratic societies. There are state organizations which work essentially in the direction of social interests, and there are others which do not. What has to be remembered is that "state" does not mean "society." In the course of 20 years, I have not heard one Soviet economist mention this fact. According to Marxian principles, there is, in the Soviet Union, no socialism, that is, *no abolition of market economy*; there is *state* capitalism, that is, capitalism without individual capitalists. One cannot, without losing all sound orientation, replace scientific insights by slogans, ideologies, illusions and theses.

¹ Cf. my books, *DIE SEXUALITÄT IM KULTURKAMPF* and *DER EINBRUCH DER SEXUALMORAL*.

It is not the individual capitalist or the state which is responsible but the function of market economy. Only when one fully and clearly recognizes this, can one judge the social effects of market economy on human life; can one ask oneself whether it might be possible to abolish this market economy of thousands of years' standing and to replace it by an economy of utility. A planned economy into which economy, everywhere, increasingly develops, automatically furthers the change from market economy to an economy of utility. One produces goods which one needs and not goods which one can sell for profit. To the extent to which Soviet economy was planned economy it developed an economy of utility. These facts are neither good nor bad, but actual processes. It was not party-political but scientific *sociological* work which led in directions which put sociology and economics on their feet.

I wish to emphasize the fact that the basic elements of Marx's discovery of the theory of value and, with that, of human work in general, are of a *biological and biosocial* nature. This basic fact escaped the attention of the party politicians. *It is only the living working power (the "variable capital") which creates values, and not the dead capital.*

One might ask why I am such a strict advocate of Marx's theory of value. It certainly is not because of any political orientation, nor because of poor economic conditions, but for the sole reason that there is no other sociology besides that of Marx which would be in better harmony with my own discovery of the biological energy. The natural organization of work as a biological fact (that is, not as a moral or political demand) as well as the findings of orgone biophysics demand the recognition of the fact of the "living commodity, working power" and its characteristics. Such facts become of tremendous weight and decisive influence

when they are supported *from two sides, independently of each other.*

Marx's economic theory meant the same for economics as Freud's theory of unconscious psychic life meant for psychology. Both presuppose a certain conception, based on facts, of the *laws* which govern human life of today.

The production of goods in society is collective, their appropriation individual. The working individual does not dispose of the product of his work, neither in private nor in state capitalism. He is a *wage worker*, that is, he is paid for the exchange value of his commodity, working power. Socially, we have on one side the capital as social power, represented in the private or state ownership of the means of production, of the soil and of houses, and on the other side we have wage work. To this correspond the two economic classes: *capital owners* (private or state) and *wage workers*. Their interests are antithetical. It is inherent in capital that "it should pay." That, however, it does only if it bears interest. And this it can do only if the capital owner gains the "surplus value," the differential between the exchange value and the use value of working power. The worker, naturally, desires to see his wages increased. The capitalist, be it individual or state, has the equally natural desire to keep wages down or to lower them. Two classes oppose each other in a hostile manner. What causes this condition and perpetuates it by means of special institutions are the socio-economic laws of market economy.

Marx's teachings, like all great human thoughts, showed all the signs of immodest boundlessness. That this boundlessness was replaced by party-political narrow-mindedness when Marx's burning intelligence was no longer present is itself one of the problems of Marxian sociology. Marx himself early drew the line between

himself and his followers when he said, "I am not a Marxist."

I am not a Marxist either, but I seriously believe to have understood Marx, in his important greatness and his unimportant weaknesses. Let us return to his great discoveries and attitudes. He was very consistent; for this he had to pay with expatriation, abject poverty and persecution. Before Marx, the belief was prevalent that "man makes history," the leader, the genius. Marx did away thoroughly with this illusion. True enough, man makes history, who else could? Certainly not the machines. *But he can make his history only under certain conditions which govern him.* The will of people and the degree to which they attain their goals are always dependent on the development of the technical mastery of nature and society at any given time. Daedalus and Icarus had the will to fly. But they could not succeed. The knowledge and the technique were lacking to produce gasoline and to construct motors which could lift a burden into the air. True, human phantasy and activity are the source of all social endeavors. But they are themselves determined and limited by the times. Copernicus and Galileo could not take away from people the feeling of the uniqueness of the role of their earth. They were severely punished because their times were as yet unable to make anything of their discovery in a practical way. There were no astronomers and no stratosphere aviators to whom the knowledge of the earth's rotation around the sun would have been indispensable. If one values one's life it is better not to be *all too far* ahead of one's times. Only Marx can make comprehensible to us the fact that he was not recognized during his lifetime and why his movement, 50 years after his death, suffered a deadly defeat at the hands of idiocy. Without Marx, we cannot understand Marx, or Marxism, or extreme metaphysics, fascism.

Every working individual is interested in the improvement of life. If, as the metaphysicists contend, man made his history by his "free will," we would have had paradise on earth long since. The fact that we do not have it, that, on the contrary, human society is threatened with destruction, shows the correctness of scientific sociology: *People have, without being aware of it, created conditions and relationships which now govern them.* They built machines in order to produce more efficiently. The machines kill them and make them starve. They discovered the movies. Innumerable actors became destitute. The more wheat and coffee is harvested the more of it is burned up or dumped into the sea, the less do the millions have to eat. This is an idiocy which certainly deserves intensive scientific scrutiny. Capitalist economy is a *profit* economy. It does not produce goods for use but for sale. The economic system does not serve the gratification of needs; rather, the needs are created, suppressed or displaced according to the laws of profit economy. World economy does not ask how many Chinese or Negroes go barefoot. But it holds annual conventions to determine this or that small change in ladies' and gentlemen's shoes in order to propagate a new "shoe fashion" as a vital necessity. The movie industry does not ask what human, pedagogical, medical or technical problems could be treated in the films. Instead, it provokes perverse and sadistic feelings in the people, in the interest of the box office. There are hardly any films at all which really solve any human problem. Most of them do not even present vital problems, and the majority provoke pathological longings. The film does not serve the people but the profit interests.

Profit economy lives by eliminating the competitor. Competition, called free enterprise, destroys small enterprises and gathers the large ones into ever more powerful concerns and trusts. "Capital becomes con-

centrated in a few hands." Pauperization keeps growing. The shoe manufacturing concerns ruin the shoemaker, the agricultural machines the farmer. The big capitalist ruins the small one, after he in turn has ruined the craftsman. The free craftsmen of yore changed into an army of employed technical specialists or largely unskilled laborers.

The rationalization of economy, instead of reducing working time, created unemployment. If business was good, if the demand was high, one kept producing more and more. The capitalists the world over do the same thing, in order to make more money, in order not to be left behind. Then the demand decreases. The capitalists have huge stocks of which they cannot dispose. The economic crisis begins, and with it a dreadful vicious circle. The entrepreneurs dismiss workers. This decreases the purchasing power of the population. Banks fail because of failing trade. This ruins the small fortunes which again reduces purchasing power. The reduced purchasing power of the population increases the stagnation of distribution. This leads to new dismissals of workers, and so on. Wages are lowered. Working time, if possible, is increased *without* increase in wages, or decreased *with* decrease in wages. Neither the entrepreneur nor the worker really comprehends what is going on. This was the effect of *objective* conditions of production around 1930.

Society is not simply a sum of individuals who live and work side by side. Social life is determined by the over-all effect of all forces in and between people. The determining factors are the *mutual "social" interdependencies*. Sociology is the teaching of these interpersonal relationships. The "well-ordered legal state" is an illusion, not a reality. It is an illusion just like the "harmony of the perfect personality" in the old ethical psychology. Since people know only the smallest fraction of their interrelations, they also are unable

to govern or alter them. For this reason, the interpersonal relationships take on the character of an inexorable fate. The average individual considers his social position such a fate. Those who see through the maze of the social dependencies and the mechanism of exploitation become "class-conscious," the capital owner as well as the owner of working power, the wage worker. Then, the former can exploit all the better, the latter can fight more successfully against exploitation. This was the theory of the Marxist parties.

This conflict remains unsolvable within the capitalist order. Either the working producers possess the means of production, or the capital owners do. That both should do so at the same time is inconceivable. The will to exploit others' working power cannot be united with the will not to let oneself be exploited. Any such union would take place at the expense of the consciousness of the process of exploitation. Capital and labor can get along "peacefully" with each other only if the exploitation is kept from the consciousness of the exploited. He who fights against this is a "Communist agitator." Marx was the greatest "Communist agitator" for nobody else has more clearly demonstrated the nature of the creation of values out of the "commodity, working power."

The practical consequence of Marx's theory of value is the appropriation of the use values by *all* working individuals, that is, the *social appropriation of the products*. I repeat: the *social* appropriation, not appropriation by the "state" or private monopolies. The socialist politicians confused social appropriation and appropriation by the state, greatly to the detriment of the clarification of socio-economic questions. While social development as a whole, as a result of the war, is more and more in the direction against private monopoly *as well as* state monopoly, the socialist parties still wish to replace private monopoly by state monopoly. This follows logically

from their equating state and society. Genuine democratic endeavor, however, is in the direction of eliminating private as well as state monopoly. The "labor management committees" in the U.S.A. represent a beginning of a work-democratic form of social appropriation; here, part of the social responsibility is shifted to *work* itself. What is meant here is the participation of the industrial workers in the management of production and distribution, in contrast to a representation of their interests by party or trade union in which the workers themselves remain *passive*.

Work democracy is based essentially on two facts:

1. A worker is every one who does socially necessary work, that is, not only the manual worker.

2. Social responsibility rests with the society of the workers and not with private individuals or individual state functionaries.

The question which, peculiarly enough, neither socialist nor any other "freedom parties" ask themselves, is the following: *Are the millions of working individuals willing and able to take their responsibility for the social process?*

Marx himself did not ask the question *what would be the attitude of the suppressed and exploited themselves toward the disclosure of the process of exploitation and suppression*. The Marxists did not doubt that the exploited would joyfully accept the "gospel of liberation." From the point of view of rationalism, this was entirely correct. Unfortunately, human thought and action is determined not only rationally. There is also *irrational* thinking and acting. This is a fact which Freud had demonstrated. Nobody had an inkling then that this fact would one day confront the workers' movement as a central and crucial problem. Marx and Freud formed two enemy camps fighting each other for the recognition of their respective interpretation of social living. This was the

starting point of my attempt to unite the two theories, an attempt which, logically, failed.

Marx's sociology demonstrated the economic processes which determine the interpersonal, that is, social, relationships. Freud's psychology, on the other hand, demonstrated the unconscious, that is, in the last analysis, *biological* forces which govern human thought and action. Thus we had, side by side, or, rather, opposed to each other, a scientific *sociological* and a scientific *psychological* interpretation of human existence.

"Objective socio-economic conditions and processes, independent of conscious human will, determine your thinking and existence," is what Karl Marx found.

"Psychic instinctual forces which are independent of conscious human will and which are, in the last analysis, rooted in as yet unknown biological sources of energy, determine your thinking and existence," is what Sigmund Freud found.

The socio-economic conditions, Marx's "productive forces," are at work *outside* of the human biopsychic organisms, or *between* them: technical development, labor conditions, family conditions, ideologies, organizations, etc. Freud's psychic instinctual forces, however, are at work *inside* the biopsychic organisms. They are as inaccessible to conscious control as are the socio-economic productive forces of Marx.

These two scientific interpretations of human existence seemed to be contradictory and mutually exclusive. Accordingly, the schools of sociology and psychoanalysis were engaged in a bitter feud. The Marxist socio-economists who had a fundamental influence on the public life of Germany and Austria viewed psychoanalysis as a dangerous and undesirable competitor in the interpretation of social and individual existence, just as the psychoanalysts considered Marxism as such.

Yet, the two schools had a common

meeting ground: both of them looked for and described the *objective* process which, hidden from human consciousness, is at work behind the superficial phenomena of ideology, of valuation, of ethical concepts and social demands. In so doing, they both proceeded truly scientifically, like physics which seeks to find the *law* of kinetics behind the phenomenon of motion or the functional laws of the invisible electrical energy behind the spark of a battery. Both did away with the psychologisms and ethicisms of economics and psychology which did not go below the surface phenomena.

It was a gigantic achievement of human thought to progress from empty demands and moral evaluations which had no basis in fact, no matter how well-meant they may have been, to the *nature* of factual processes. Only from such facts, and not from empty demands, could a non-utopian, realistic practice for the improvement of individual and social existence develop.

The economists, philosophers and psychologists of Marx's times continued to adhere to the metaphysical concept of man's "free will." They were unable to let go of this concept because it meant an illusory consolation in the existing chaos. We know that illusions always have a greater attraction than tangible truths. The illusion of a free will and of a supernatural determination of man, of a Providence and a fatefulness of life, fulfills two irrational functions: For one, it makes man forget his helplessness in the face of nature, including his own drives, and drowns out his feeling of impotence and his fear of living, by giving him a feeling of being like God. This function found its extreme expression in the fascist emotional plague. As we know today, but did not know in 1928, it was the result of the irrationalism in the masses of people, and not the achievement of one man, a man who had completely failed in any rational work.

The second function of the concept of free determination has a rational, though always misleading, core. This is the function of giving people the courage to fight for their existence even where they feel helpless, small and impotent, where they lack the knowledge of the processes they are dealing with. Man has to exist in any case, with or without knowledge. For that he needs the emotion of illusion. Illusions, then, are not just irrational formations; seen from the emotional point of view, they are also power-giving attitudes. Hence the simile of "the faith that moves mountains." The success of Hitlerist mysticism has clearly demonstrated the fact that mysticism, based on emotions as it is, has a much more powerful social effect than scientific knowledge.

Illusion, then, has to be recognized as justified and necessary, but only where man has not progressed to actual knowledge. If we were to condemn illusion as such in an absolute and mechanistic manner, we would be apt to be intolerant toward such achievements as are based on illusions. The actual achievement of the Soviet Union in creating a better economy and in eliminating the crassest social injustices was based on the illusion that one was "developing socialism." The illusion of mechanistic natural science that, in fighting religion and mysticism, it was discovering the "nature of the soul" led to great achievements in the fields of physiology and colloid chemistry.

Nevertheless, the dangers and the harmfulness of illusions are far greater than their usefulness. What achievements spring from them cannot stand comparison with practical achievements springing from actual knowledge concerning facts and processes. Again and again, illusory Weltanschauungen nullify the rational striving of man to reduce the realm of the unknown and to widen the field of knowledge. Illusions again and again lead to reactionary, regressive social institutions.

This is shown in the regressive development of the Soviet Union as well as in the inhibition which mechanistic concepts in natural science exert on the growth of knowledge of the living function. Thus, if I point out the rational function of the illusion, this does not mean that the *scientific* struggle for the expansion of human knowledge should be relaxed. If I cannot use my leg I will use a crutch in order to walk as best I can. Just the same, I shall throw away the crutch as soon as I regain the natural motility of my leg.

Because of the bolstering of their egos which the metaphysicists and mystics of every kind obtained from their illusions, they have continued to take a violent stand against Marxism and Freudism. Yet, their cries, "I am so free, so superior, so God-like, master of myself and of nature," such cries have not changed in the least their dependence on psychic irrationalism on the one hand and on the chaotic socio-economic processes on the other. Indeed, the world catastrophe of the past decade has demonstrated this tragic dependence in an unmistakable manner.

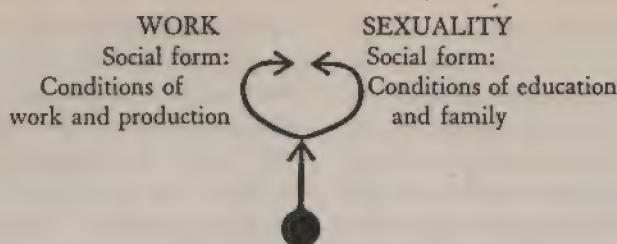
The sciences of Marx and of Freud were indispensable prerequisites for a mastery of these two kinds of human dependency. They had a common meeting ground also in the fact that Marx as well as Freud built his science on as yet undiscovered bio-social and biological laws:

Marx's whole socio-economic concept rests on the *living* nature of human work. *Work is a basic biological activity*, characteristic of even primitive organisms. Man, in his work functions, is not distinguished from other animals by the fact that he works; that, all living beings do, or they could not exist. What distinguishes him is only the fact that he tried to improve his work functions by the *invention of tools*. Marx has shown us that man, in this social differentiation from other animals, came to grief in that he became the slave of the tools which he had created.

To judge from their publications, the fact has escaped the Marxists that it is the difference between the use value and the exchange value of the *living* working power which for thousands of years has determined the social mechanisms of patriarchal civilization. In his philosophical writings, Marx continually stressed the fact that, in the last analysis, man with his *biological* organization is the "*prerequisite* of all history." Of the concrete nature of this "biological organization," of course, Marx knew nothing, for biology did not know anything about it either; and the specific biological energy, the cosmic orgone, was not discovered until the years between 1936 and 1939.

The two basic objective biological functions of the living, then, "*work*" on the one hand, "*sexuality*" or "*pleasure function*" on the other, were treated, apart from each other, in two separate scientific systems, Marx's sociology on the one hand, and Freud's psychology on the other. In Marx's system, the sexual process led a Cinderella existence under the misnomer, "development of the family." The work process, on the other hand, suffered the same fate in Freud's psychology under such misnomers as "sublimation," "hunger instinct," or "ego instincts." Far from being basically antithetical, the two scientific systems, their originators being altogether unaware of it, met in the biological basis of living matter, in the *biological energy of all living organisms* which, according to our functional method of thinking, expresses itself in *work* on the one hand and *sexuality* on the other.

The clarification of this functional character of biological energy, its simultaneous identity and antithesis, remained the task of sex-economic research. Of that I had, of course, no inkling at the time, when, between 1928 and 1930, I made the first attempts to introduce psychological methods into sociological thinking. My attempts of that time to solve the conflict



Law of biological energy of living matter.

between the two scientific systems forced me, with the logic of fact-finding, on the path which finally led to the discovery of the orgone, the cosmic life energy. I doubt that I would ever have succeeded in discovering the orgone had I not for years, in the hard struggle of everyday work, applied sociological criticism to Freud's psychology and had I not demonstrated the gap in Marx's socio-economy and bridged it with the concept of "character structure."

The laws of biological energy, of the orgone, comprise the basic mechanisms of work as well as of sexuality, and, with that, the emotional forces *within, without and between* people. These laws are the

basis of rational human strivings as well as of irrational strivings, of scientific search as well as of the mystical belief in the existence of an unknown Almighty.

The basic biological mechanisms of the living are not a mechanical summation of work functions plus sexual functions. Rather, they constitute a *third* factor which is at one and the same time *identical* and *different* as well as something *deeper*. Sex-economy and orgone biophysics, then, are not a summation of Marxian and Freudian concepts. They are new disciplines based on sociological as well as depth-psychological findings, the *incompatibility* of which led to the discovery of the third factor which they have in common.

THE STUMBLING BLOCK IN MEDICINE AND PSYCHIATRY

By THEODORE P. WOLFE, M.D.

In medical and psychiatric literature, one finds a great many peculiar statements which become understandable only if one realizes that they are based on the ignorance of *the basic role of the sexual function*. The unwillingness or inability to recognize this basic role of sexuality and its far-reaching consequences in psychiatry, medicine and sociology lead to a number of typical fallacies. In the case of many of these, their function is obvious: that of diverting attention from such simple facts as that the neuroses are due to a disturbed genital function. Thus, while this fact is obvious to any half-way healthy layman, the scientist asserts—without proof—that the seat of the neurosis is the thalamus or a “weakened central nervous system,” or that the most important cause of psychoses and neuroses is “heredity.” It is easier to blame heredity than a society which insists on the suppression of healthy infantile and adolescent sexuality. The fact is being more and more realized that a disturbance in the autonomic system plays an outstanding role in the neuroses and many so-called physical diseases. Yet, unless one also realizes the fundamental role played by the sexual function in the maintenance as well as the disturbance of the vegetative equilibrium, one gets lost in the maze of autonomic phenomena and arrives at misinterpretations such as regarding a disturbance in one or the other endocrine gland as the causative factor while, in fact, it represents only one aspect of a total vegetative disturbance. This leads to a mechanistic “organ-mindedness” which makes one overlook the total function and makes one equate, for example, the sexual function with the function of

the gonads. This, in turn, leads to such erroneous therapeutic assumptions as that endocrine treatment with sex glands is a causal therapy for sexual disturbances. The ignorance of the total function leads to what has been called “psychologizing biology,” to such statements as “the cancer of the uterus expresses the wish for a child” or “the over-activity of the thyroid gland is due to a craving for maternal protection,” etc.

These and other fallacies in medical and psychiatric thinking are discussed here on the basis of a book by an English physician¹ who makes a vigorous attempt to get away from the medicine of the “test-tube doctors,” that is, a mechanistic, unalive medicine. The discussion will show that the reason for the essential failure of this task lies in the non-recognition of the fundamental role of the sexual function.

The book is in four sections. “The first deals with personality in relation to disease. This is necessary because it is our personality and not any individual organ or tissue which interprets and sustains environmental stresses.” So far so good. Valid as this statement is in a general way, it holds only if it is backed up by concrete concepts and findings with regard to such things as “personality” and “environmental stress.” But in Chapter One, DISEASE AND PERSONALITY, we read the following:

We are told that duodenal symptoms are preceded by prolonged or intense anxiety. This is not always so. The pre-

¹ Arthur Guirdham: DISEASE AND THE SOCIAL SYSTEM. London: George Allen & Unwin, Ltd., 1942. P. 239.

ceding conditions are such as give reasonable ground for anxiety. This is by no means the same. One person responds by conscious worry. He develops a neurosis. The other produces a pyloric ulcer.

There can be no doubt that an ulcer is preceded by prolonged anxiety. So is every neurosis or neurotic symptom. When a person "responds by conscious worry," he already has a neurosis. The confusion here comes from the fact that the author does not have a concept of anxiety based on natural science. Anxiety is a state of sympatheticotonia based on the damming-up of energy. This may lead to ulcer, the sympatheticotonic dysfunction of the gastric mucosa rather fully explaining the pathogenesis. Or it may lead to a functional cardiac disorder, or to a psycho-neurosis. Why the outcome is one in this case and another in another case we generally do not know. But then we should say so instead of resorting to spurious interpretations. "But there is an entirely different kind of duodenal case," continues the author. "In this the innate excessive drive of the individual induces the symptoms. His engines are too highly geared . . . Pituitary activity is partly responsible." This recourse to "innate," "constitutional," "hereditary," "God-given" factors, as it were, vitiates the whole book. There is no such thing as an "innate excessive drive"; there are only instinctual energies which do not find a normal discharge and therefore seek discharge through abnormal channels. The "excessiveness" of the drive, then, is not "innate" but the result of its being dammed up. "I know well," the author continues, "that in such cases the psychoanalytic argument is that the excessive drive is compensatory, that it is induced by an inferiority feeling which the individual attempts to overcome by excessive achievement. But this does not explain all these cases. There are many without signs of inferiority complex." The author overlooks that in this case, the "compensa-

tory excessive drive" is a form of *psychic behavior*. Of course, it does not explain all these cases. In fact, it does not explain any of them. For an inferiority complex, operating, as it does, in a superficial psychic layer, has nothing whatsoever to do with the ulcer. That "pituitary activity is partly responsible" is also an unwarranted assumption. No doubt, a pituitary disturbance may be found. If so, this is itself one of the *symptoms* of a disturbed vegetative equilibrium but is no more the *cause* of the ulcer than is the color of the hair.

In duodenal cases the question of lasting relief depends on the patient's subtype. If his symptoms are associated with adolescent impressions, or conflict, we can do a lot. In the presence of innate defects of temperament the symptoms persist. We cannot as yet cope with those flaws in the personality which induce in each their coincident disease.

It is hard to see how symptoms could be "associated with adolescent impressions, or conflict." What is affected by adolescent—and infantile—sexual conflicts is the total biological function; it is altered in the direction of chronic sympatheticotonia. The kind of symptoms which arise on this soil of a disturbed vegetative equilibrium is largely accidental. From a therapeutic point of view, it makes little difference what they are because they themselves cannot be treated, except perhaps by a symptomatic drug therapy. If, on the other hand, one works at the biological basis of the symptoms, if one eliminates the stasis of sexual energy and with that the chronic tendency of the organism to act and react sympatheticotonically, it matters not whether this total way of reacting gave rise to tachycardia, to a diarrhea, or to ulcer symptoms. The therapeutic result, then, depends not on the patient's "type" or "sub-type" but on whether or not therapy reaches the basic mechanism of the disturbance.

What, one may ask, are "innate defects of temperament"? Such terms belong in treatises on moral philosophy and not in books on medical subjects. Such a point of view leads inevitably to statements as the following: "We cannot as yet cope with those flaws in the personality which induce in each their coincident disease." This statement is correct if we consider character traits as "defects of temperament" and "flaws in the personality"; if, furthermore, we think of specific character traits as inducing specific organic diseases, for which assumption there is no scientific proof. If, however, one has a concept of character based on natural science instead of on psychology or ethics; if one knows the character to be nothing static, God-given, hereditary, congenital, etc., but the typical way of biopsychic reacting as it results from definite and demonstrable causes, then one is indeed able to "deal with these flaws in the personality." The technique which enables one to do so is Reich's character-analytic vegetotherapy.

The author proposes to derive from diseases such as "peptic ulceration, hyperthyroidism, diabetes, rheumatism, arteriosclerosis, chronic nephritis, etc.," a concept of "vulnerable personalities." "All have a strong hereditary factor." It may be said that if one is going to develop any new concept in pathology, one first has to free oneself of such fallacious concepts as the alibi of "heredity." These diseases, the author says, are "the destiny of foredoomed psyches." *If that is so, why write a book on "Disease and the Social System"?* These diseases, the author continues, "are the somatic protests of defeated psyches." No, they are the *socially* conditioned defeat of a biological organism. They are not, as the author states, a matter of "neuropathy," of a "more vulnerable nervous system." It is really high time for this kind of brain mythology to disappear from medical literature.

Chapter Two is called THE EMOTIONAL CAUSES OF PHYSICAL DISEASE, in which the author "deals further with diseases associated with different personality types." He refers to "chronic constitutional diseases," like peptic ulcer, arteriosclerosis, thyrotoxicosis, etc., as "strain diseases." These are "characterized by chemical and hormonal changes similar to those induced by anxiety, by endocrine dysfunction and by vegetative imbalance." The author then raises the question whether we "can go a step further and say that in these diseases the chemical and hormonal changes are, to a considerable extent, attributable to fear in its modern dress of chronic anxiety?" He then enumerates various observations concerning physiological changes accompanying anxiety, but all these are invalidated a page or two later: "What is the factor in the personality which causes *physical* diseases in response to strain? I have indicated that the endocrine system is the vulnerable focus. I believe the nature of the disease exhibited is determined by innate impoverishment of vitality in particular glands." So, again, we return to "innate" factors in this or that organ, after a seeming attempt to get at factors in the "personality" and the "emotions." Thus, instead of getting away from the brain mythology of the 19th century, the author arrives at a concept of a "wider neuropathic diathesis," and states that "the central nervous system is peculiarly vulnerable and of impoverished vitality in Western man." Apart from vague references to "fear, anxiety and strain," this chapter on "Emotional causes of physical disease" contains nothing on emotional causes of physical disease.

In Chapter Three, PHYSIQUE AND DISEASE, the author mentions first the study of the connection between physique and psychological disorder as exemplified by Kretschmer, the asthenic habitus in tuberculosis and duodenal ulcer, and then proceeds to study "a reverse phenomenon,

the effect of disease in altering posture." He refers especially to the role of chronic anxiety and depression in emphysema. Here, we find a number of correct and important clinical observations with which the vegetotherapist is very familiar.

In addition to the relatively inexpandable chest, with rigid muscles, the patient's head is thrust stiffly forward in an attitude of anxious watchfulness. The neck, too, is held stiffly. The sternomastoid is harshly outlined. Its anterior margin is sharply defined. The trapezius is also abnormally tense. . . . How do we explain these peculiarities of configuration? The position of the head and neck is natural in states of tension. The shape of the chest is due to prolonged fixation of the chest muscles. In these cases it is a kind of physiological habit due to anxiety. It is an axiom that anxiety causes some of us to hold their breath. . . . Respiration, arrested by anxiety, is most commonly halted in partial expiration.

This theory is not far-fetched. I doubt its acceptance. It is founded on primitive and commonplace observance. It can therefore anticipate no kindlier salutation than the cold eye and the curled lip of the test-tube doctor. I offer a few more facts, with proper fatalism, from a sense of duty. Not many people breathe properly. An even smaller number of neurotics have mastered this simple exercise. Anxiety cases breathe notoriously badly. They are incapable of the full deep movements of expiration. . . .

The author then poses the question: "Are anxiety and a tendency to emphysema concomitant traits of a particular personality type? Alternatively, does the anxiety induce the posture? I cannot be certain."

Character-analytic vegetotherapy answers this question. The chronic inspiratory attitude of the chest and anxiety are neither independent concomitant phenomena, nor does anxiety "cause" this

attitude. Rather, the chronic inspiratory attitude is identical with anxiety. They are typical of the neurotic character, no matter what its type. It is the attitude of the individual incapable of giving himself, and it does not fully disappear until a patient has lost his fear of surrendering to the flow of his vegetative sensations, in other words, until he has lost his orgasm anxiety and has attained orgasmic potency.

Chapter Four deals with DISEASE AND POSTURE. "Postural defects are often a bridge between anxious reactions and physical illness. The organic condition may be ushered in first by a period of functional disturbance. In several diseases we can trace four stages in development—strain and anxiety, postural defect, functional illness and organic disease." It may be pointed out at the outset that the author deals only with one, although a very important aspect of posture, that of lumbar lordosis. He points out that there are certain bony conditions in which posture obviously contributes to disease, such as spondylitis and arthritis. "There is a prodromal stage of increased tension in the lumbar muscles. Muscular rigidity expresses psychological tension." While this is undoubtedly correct, one would doubt the accuracy of such specific statements as that "the poker spine [in spondylitis] expresses the poker face." Equally unwarranted is the assumption of the association of several varieties of dyspepsia and constipation with postural "causes." Undoubtedly, they do occur together very frequently, but these visceral disturbances are, as will be shown, not "caused" by the faulty posture.

The author himself is well aware of the problem, which he states as follows:

It is very difficult to say whether postural deformity and abnormalities of visceral function are coequal signs of a vulnerable psyche or whether the former

precedes the latter. The question can be answered in two ways, firstly by a study of the response to relaxation and correction of the postural deformity; secondly, and perhaps more naturally, by a study of postural defects in children.

The author reaches the conclusion that "it is impossible, from the study of the effects of relaxation, to say whether postural defect predates visceral and also anxiety symptoms." However, he is unaware of the reason for this failure. The reason lies in the concept and practice of a *mechanical* relaxation therapy which, by mechanical manipulation, releases tensions without asking what it is that *causes* the tension. Here is an interesting observation from this relaxation therapy: "Some of these patients find it extremely difficult to pass from the superficial to the deep phase of relaxation. *They experience a growing tension, an insupportable restlessness, and symptoms referable to the epigastrium.* [Italics are mine.—T.P.W.] The latter, at first vague and poorly defined, are found later to include heartburn and the feelings of emptiness encountered in hypertonic stomach." In other words, when relaxation reaches a certain degree, these patients develop symptoms of anxiety! This is why they hold on to their tension; because letting go of the tension means releasing energy which was bound up in the muscle tension and which will manifest itself as anxiety. This is an everyday experience in vegetotherapy and was described by Reich in the early days of this therapy. It is obvious, then, that the "postural defects," that is, the muscular tensions, do not "predate" the anxiety symptoms; on the contrary, they were developed as a defense against anxiety. About the question whether the "postural defect" predates the visceral symptoms, more later.

The author, unaware of this connection because of his mechanical concept of relaxation, then proceeds to look for the

answer to his question in the postural defect in children. "Defects of posture," he writes,

are among the very first concrete signs of anxiety and exhaustion in children. They can be observed at the age of five. Lumbar lordosis is the commonest defect. . . . Enuresis is the condition, *par excellence*, where the coexistence of bad posture is most striking. . . . I cannot explain why abnormal posture should induce, say, deficient bladder control. . . . The three conditions I have mentioned—asthma, enuresis and spastic constipation—have this significant common factor—they are all associated with imbalance of the autonomic nervous system. . . . It may be that the autonomic system is peculiarly vulnerable to the adverse mechanics of faulty posture. . . . There is no specific psychological problem in the environment and no pathognomonic psychological trait in the child associated with any of these physical diseases. . . . Both postural defect and physical disease predate considerably the appearance of any conscious anxiety. . . . How does one treat conditions like asthma and enuresis in young children? To a large extent by a technique common to all. Rest is the sheet-anchor. . . . The children are also taught muscular relaxation. Their posture is corrected. An attempt should be made to correct adverse psychological factors. . . .

Here are a number of important observations which it is impossible to understand without sex-economic knowledge. From a purely clinical point of view, it is noteworthy that the author finds lumbar lordosis a common *defect* in children (he finds it in over 85% of children with enuresis). The recognition of this condition is so important because lumbar lordosis, in children as well as in adults, is usually considered "normal." This misinterpretation is, of course, partly due to its almost universal occurrence and the fact that what is common, average, is considered "normal." Another, more eas-

ily overlooked reason for this misinterpretation is the specific etiology of the lordosis, a question which our author does not even bring up. He is content with calling it "bad posture." With that, however, it is easily relegated to the realm of corrective gymnastics or simple exhortation. In reality, it is a most important medical subject. The reason why its etiology is commonly unknown is that it has something to do with sexuality. As a result, physicians arrive at all kinds of erroneous explanations on which they then base equally erroneous therapeutic procedures (such as "sacro-iliac fusion"). Why can this pathological lumbar lordosis "be observed at the age of five," as the author states? Sex-economic investigation has given the incontrovertible answer which is confirmed in everyday vegetotherapeutic practice (*cf.*, for example, Wilhelm Reich: *THE FUNCTION OF THE ORGASM*, 1942, pp. 303ff: The mobilization of the "dead pelvis"). It is at the age of five that most children, under the pressure of a sex-negative, threatening and punishing environment, see themselves compelled to repress their genital sensations which induce them to masturbate. One of the basic mechanisms in bringing about this repression of genital sensations is that of *retracting the pelvis*, an action which, of course, results in a lumbar lordosis. It is not difficult to see why this lordosis should be so often found together with enuresis. It is not because, as the author suggests, abnormal posture "induces" deficient bladder control; nor is it because "the autonomic system is peculiarly vulnerable to the adverse mechanics of faulty posture." It is not a matter of the effect of "faulty posture" on the "autonomic system"; as we have seen, the "faulty posture" is itself a reaction to autonomic processes, that is, to vegetative sensations which have to be repressed for fear of punishment. The danger of such confusion is lessened if one no longer speaks

of "faulty posture" but of retraction of the pelvis which serves a definite defensive function. "The deformity is sometimes excessive," writes our author, "as though the child were artificially maintaining his abnormal position." That is indeed what the child is doing; if he did not, the genital sensations of which he is afraid would again occur. Now, this retraction of the pelvis is not an isolated phenomenon resulting only in the mechanical defect of lumbar lordosis. It is only *one* of the means of repressing genital sensations, and is always accompanied by others. One of these is the pulling up and tensing of *the pelvic floor*; this contraction must of necessity interfere with the functions of micturition and defecation. This is, then, what explains urinary disturbances such as enuresis. The psychoanalyst might object at this point and say that enuresis has been shown to be of "psychogenic" origin while the urologist will maintain that it is due to this or that—usually slight—anatomical abnormality. Our author states that "the psychological factor in enuresis has long attracted attention. The more obvious association of appalling posture has passed without comment." To the psychoanalyst one would have to say that there are, undoubtedly, "psychic," i.e., experiential factors at work but that, on the other hand, such a disturbance as enuresis would not be possible without a physiological factor such as the contraction of the pelvic floor. To the urologist one would have to say that such anatomical deviations as may be found are usually within the limits of the normal and play no etiological role; or, if they do, it is only because of the superimposed functional disturbance, the contraction of the pelvic floor. To the author one would have to say that what he calls the "association of appalling posture" has a well-founded reason, as explained above.

"There is no specific psychological problem in the environment and no path-

ognomonic psychological trait in the child associated with any of these physical diseases [asthma, enuresis and spastic constipation]", says the author. Anyone with any experience in treating neuroses will disagree with this statement. There is one environmental problem that is *common* to all of them: brutal, premature training to excremental cleanliness, and the prohibition of infantile masturbation. To find the existence of such well-known environmental, i.e., social, factors explicitly denied in a book on "Disease and the Social System" is almost fantastic. Whether one or the other "physical disease" or neurosis will develop from this common ground depends on individual factors in the developmental history. "Both postural defect and physical disease predate considerably the appearance of any conscious anxiety," continues the author. In reality, the opposite is true: they develop as a result of the anxiety, in an attempt to immobilize the energy which creates anxiety. The author's statement is based on the fact that for this very reason, by the time he sees the "postural defect and physical disease," the anxiety is *no longer* present consciously. In its stead, there is a chest in inspiratory position, a retracted pelvis, a contracted pelvic floor, etc. Nevertheless, his statement is true, in this sense: anxiety may *again* make its appearance later on; this shows that the defenses have proven insufficient to hold down the energy. Then, the cycle may repeat itself: new defensive mechanisms are brought into play, and anxiety may recur again at a later time (e.g., at puberty) when these new defenses prove insufficient.

If the technique of treating conditions like asthma and enuresis in young children is largely "one common to all," the therapist should be aware of what is common in their etiology, namely, the repression of normal vegetative functioning. "Muscular relaxation" by itself will not correct this; it may, as pointed out above,

result in the mobilization of anxiety and thus necessitate new defensive measures on the part of the patient. Similarly, the "correction of posture" is a rational procedure only if the therapist is aware of the fact that he is not dealing just with "poor posture" but with a defense attitude; to take away this defense without eliminating the underlying anxiety which causes it may be worse than no therapy at all.

Chapter Five deals with SEX MALFUNCTION AND PHYSICAL DISEASE. The author starts out from the "axiom that anxiety arises from interference with the operation of primary instincts. The sex instinct is most liable to frustration in our social system." He finds that

in rheumatic conditions, particularly in women, sex frustration plays a large part. This applies particularly in the case of fibrositis and the periarticular forms of rheumatism (rheumatoid arthritis). I know of one rheumatic specialist who invariably asked his female patients how often they had intercourse, and how satisfactorily. The part played by sex frustration in inducing rheumatism is not difficult to follow. Interference with the sex instinct is probably, perhaps almost entirely, the commonest cause of anxiety. Chronic anxiety increases muscular tension. . . . Satisfactory coitus is one of the most efficient mechanisms for relaxing muscles. . . . Denied this antidote to muscular tension the female patient, where other predisposing factors are present, is liable to attacks of rheumatism.

The author then enumerates some of the conditions which lead to rheumatism, such as sexual stimulation with only partial satisfaction, impotence of the husband, long engagement, etc., in other words, situations of more or less chronic sexual stasis. Then, however, he goes off into endocrinological speculation, arriving at such statements as, "We have strong hints that dysfunction of the gonads is impor-

tant in rheumatic conditions . . . If we study the broader question of the sex glands in relation to muscular tension we are able to obtain the most striking data." In other words, the author confuses the *sexual* function and its relation to muscular tension with the function of the *gonads*. He then reports on therapeutic results with male sex hormone in melancholia, Parkinson's disease and arteriosclerosis, deducing, from symptomatic improvement, that "these diseases are specifically associated with dysfunction of the sex glands." The author himself is somewhat uneasy about these endocrinological assumptions. He finds it necessary to point out that he is

not afflicted with obsessions about endocrinology. . . . What I have said about endocrine dyscrasia does not invalidate current beliefs which stress the importance of infection, chill, fatigue, etc. . . . My theory delves farther back into the dark crevices of predisposition. I am viewing these cases from the standpoint of one studying personalities fundamentally prone to particular kinds of malady. And within the limits of our present knowledge the relative functioning of the endocrine glands determines the nature of the psyche.

With that, the author has exactly defined the nature of his "obsessions about endocrinology." The concept that "the relative functioning of the endocrine glands determines the nature of the psyche" is a metaphysical one. And as far as the *predisposition* to certain diseases is concerned, it is not the dysfunction of this or that gland, such as the gonads, which creates a predisposition; it is the disturbance of the *sex function*. This is a total biological function in which individual glands play only a minor role. In addition, the dysfunction of individual glands is usually only one manifestation among many of a disturbed

vegetative economy, and may be secondary, that is, not the cause, but the *result* of a disturbed vegetative equilibrium.

The author recognizes the importance of sexual frustration in the etiology of cancer:

Cancer is our greatest medical problem. It shows a rising incidence in the last few decades. . . . Cancer of the breast is a disease which arises often as a sequel to chronic mastitis. . . . The increased breast tension is associated with thwarted sexuality, desire for children, or both. . . . Chronic mastitis occurs in women with thwarted but still potent maternal and sexual instincts. It often attacks women of masculine configuration not amounting to virilism. These women have often a partly masculine psychology. They are tough, ruthless administrators. They are often psychologically homosexual. They retain the instinctive impulses of womanhood. They show the outward manifestations of manhood. They are tough specimens. This type is prone to carcinoma. . . . There is at least one other cancer where personality factors are predominant. This is the cancer, supervening on fibroid formation, in the virgin uterus of unmarried women. Here often the fibroid, and the subsequent cancer, express an inhibited desire to reproduce.

About the cancer specialist, the author has the following to say:

Some observers question the derivation of breast cancer from chronic mastitis in any considerable number of patients. The more specialized the observer the more he denies the connection between mastitis and malignancy. On the other hand, general practitioners insist on the relationship. This is a fact of significance. General practitioners are more prone to regard patients as a whole. The surgical specialist concentrates too exclusively on the breast. Those exclusively devoted to cancer research suffer from the disabilities inseparable to ultra-specialization. They are liable to regard the disease they study as

a rigidly closed circuit. They are seeking always a hard-and-fast connection between specific cause, specific symptoms and specific cure. The personality of the patient concerns them little. It is an unwelcome obtrusion into the pure air of mathematical exactitude.

While the author's concept thus differs from that of the orthodox mechanistic concept of cancer, the sex-economic concept of cancer differs even more widely from that of the author. The main difference lies, of course, in the fact that the author, in accord with customary concepts, considers the cancer tumor to be the cancer disease, while sex-economic cancer research has clearly shown that the tumor is no more than a symptom of a general disease, the cancer biopathy. (Cf. W. Reich, "The carcinomatous shrinking biopathy," *This Journal* 1, 1942, 131-155, and "Experimental orgone therapy of the cancer biopathy," *ibid.*, 2, 1943, 1-92). It is extremely difficult to see a connection between chronic mastitis and "masculine configuration," "a partly masculine psychology," "psychological homosexuality" and "outward manifestations of manhood." All these things are nothing but secondary manifestations of an inhibited genitality and have in themselves nothing to do with mastitis or cancer. Reich, on the other hand, has shown that the inhibition of the *total* sexual function may result in a *total* disease picture which he described as the carcinomatous shrinking biopathy, and that this total reaction is the soil on which the tumor develops. He has shown, furthermore, that patients who develop cancer are anything but "rough specimens." On the contrary, if there is any specific character trait to be found in potential or actual cancer patients, it is that of resignation, which corresponds to the process of "giving up," of shrinking, in the vegetative apparatus. There can be no doubt that the cancer of the uterus has a sexual causation, as

has the fibroid of the uterus. However, not in the sense that "the fibroid, and the subsequent cancer, express an inhibited desire to reproduce." Such a formulation means psychologizing biological processes. The fibroid, or the cancer, do not "express" anything, they do not have any psychological "meaning." Such formulations are based on the common misconception that the Freudian interpretation of "meaning," which is valid in the psychological realm, also applies in the biological realm. As Reich has pointed out many times: While biological laws apply also in the psychological realm, the reverse is not true. Psychological laws do not apply in the biological realm.

All in all, this chapter is important inasmuch as it shows a realization of the importance of sexual frustration in the causation of physical disease:

Since the outlets for sexual activity depend so largely on current ethics, the relation is obvious between the maladies discussed and the prevailing social system. . . . Chronic anxiety results most commonly from interference with the operation of a primary instinct. The most common instinct restricted by our present civilization is that of sex.

Part Two of the book deals with "The Neuropathic Nature of Disease." Chapter Six is on DISEASE AS A SOCIAL VARIABLE. The author points out our greatly decreased susceptibility to plague, cholera, smallpox and many tropical diseases. "Western man's relative resistance to infections is due to his altered nature." But we are not told in what manner his nature has changed. At the same time the author states, "We are polluted with neurosis. To a large extent neurosis does not kill. But it bequeaths to the next generation an impoverished vitality which will not merely express itself in neuroses or psychoses, but which will give rise sooner

or later, and mostly sooner, to rheumatism, peptic ulcer, etc. . . . The vitality of our stock is becoming impoverished."

The author then discusses the "Interchangeability of disease." "Mental, physical and nervous disease are interchangeable." This is, of course, correct to the extent to which they are the expression, in one form or another, of a disturbed energy economy. To the author, however, they are "alternative expressions of a general neuropathic tendency." He thinks it is "wise to classify neuroses, psychoses and organic diseases of the brain and spinal cord as equal evidences of an impoverished vitality of the nervous system. In terms of this crude classification it seems possible that what we call non-nervous physical disease (provided we limit ourselves to the chronic constitutional conditions) is attributable largely to some flaw in the endocrine glands plus an innate tendency to imbalance in the autonomic nervous system. In nervous conditions the focus of diminished resistance is in the central system." Thus, there is, unfortunately, again and again the reversion to brain mythology, to such metaphysical concepts as "flaws" and "innate tendencies."

Chapter Seven deals with the problem, NEUROTIC, FUNCTIONAL AND ORGANIC. The author fully realizes that this distinction, as commonly used, is fallacious and often pernicious:

There is nothing more irritating and effete than this craze for precise nomenclature. It is an infiltration of bureaucracy into medicine. It is non-therapeutic. It is often illogical, seeing with what obstinacy man persists in defying classification. It is found chiefly in those pretentious departments of medicine where the alleviation of the pains of individual man is a secondary consideration. It is also found, significantly enough, in specialities like neurology and psychiatry, where treatment is too often unproductive. . . .

We have seen that neurotic conditions may proceed through functional disturbances to organic disease. We have seen, too, that all these varieties of reaction may be present in the same patient at the same time. But to this day medicine largely insists that these types of reaction are mutually exclusive. Much valuable time is lost in the mephitic atmosphere of the wards of our teaching hospitals in distinguishing between the three categories. . . . This *idée fixe* about neurotic, functional and organic disease makes it necessary for the doctor to make up his mind too early. We have mentioned the possibility of his regarding organic disease as functional. The reverse process is just as dangerous. Cases are diagnosed as organic far too soon and condemned to unnecessary and restrictive invalidism.

But the author's practical illustrations show a confusion which is worth pointing out. He argues, for example, that if the value of Vitamin B is proven in peripheral organic conditions of the nervous system, it would be a mistake not to give it to the patient with functional nerve pains where it can be of immense benefit. True, if this results in symptomatic relief, and has no harmful effect, it may be indicated. But the therapist should not overlook the fact that this is a symptomatic and not a causal therapy, and that the question as to the nature of the functional disturbance remains. Only when this question is answered can one arrive at a rational, causal therapy. The author does, indeed, raise the question, "But why are the peripheral nerves selected for the expression of the functional, anxious or hysterical tendency?" But his answer is, "Because they are innately vulnerable." Similarly, in mucous colitis, while granting the importance of "tension, conflict of other psychoneurotic factors," he insists that the colon must be regarded as "especially vulnerable." As long as one cannot say in what this "spe-

cial vulnerability" consists, it remains an empty word.

The author points out that some hysterical patients have convulsions indistinguishable from those of epilepsy. From this, he concludes, "The attitude we should adopt towards fits in both idiopathic epileptics and hysterics is that in both kinds of patient we are dealing with an *innate tendency* to produce convulsions." He asks: "Does not this separation into organic and functional obscure from our view the fact that in epileptiform hysteria and epilepsy we are dealing in both cases with an identical biological reaction?" After having posed this fundamental question, the author, in his attempt to answer it, is again misled by his metaphysical concept of "innate tendencies." He looks for the answer in the similarity between the epileptic and the hysterical personality structure, a similarity which he tries—unconvincingly—to prove. Why not stay with the formulation presented in the question, namely, that we are dealing with identical biological reactions? That is undoubtedly correct. This reaction consists in a convulsive discharge of dammed-up biological energy. This reaction, however, is specific neither of epilepsy nor of hysteria. We see such convulsive discharges every day in vegeto-therapeutic practice, in patients who are neither epileptic nor hysterical. In itself, it is an entirely unspecific reaction. It is due to sexual stasis and therefore occurs in all neurotic individuals, that is, in all individuals who are orgasmically impotent, in other words, incapable of discharging their sexual energies in a physiological manner.

The author then goes on to discuss a connection between epilepsy and dipsomania, "two diseases, at present considered entirely as separate entities, but which represent two different aspects of a more fundamental biological reaction . . . The peculiar and sudden violence of the dip-

somaniac reaction is analogous to that which occurs in epilepsy. Both are total personality reactions . . ." But so is the catatonic raptus! The author mentions the role of sexual frustration in alcoholism: "Alcoholics are usually neglectful of coitus, the most ubiquitous of all sedatives [provided, one should add, that it is satisfying.—T.P.W.] . . . Your true alcoholic has usually a low sexual potential *ab initio*. Alcohol admittedly is the most accessible sedative. But can one explain on psycho-analytic lines the hereditary factor in alcoholism?" No, of course not, but neither can one explain or prove it in any other way. The author, however, considers epilepsy and alcoholism as "the two best examples of direct inheritance."

It is distressing to see how the author, almost after every attempt at a functional approach to this or that question, falls back into the alibis of heredity and brain mythology. Perhaps the worst example of the latter is the statement "that even in neuroses where the symptoms demonstrated are expressed in predominantly psychological mechanisms, e.g. the obsessional states, there is growing evidence that they are due to either organic lesions or dysfunction of the central nervous system. Obsessional neurosis has been ascribed with considerable justification to a mid-brain lesion." Such statements often make one feel like throwing the whole book out. There is, in fact, not the slightest evidence available to support such brain-mythological contentions, as is more and more openly admitted even among the traditional standard-bearers of brain mythology, the neurologists and "neuropsychiatrists." The only "justification," if you want to call it that, for such statements, is, of course, the desire to get away from the sexual causation of the neuroses; but that is only possible by inventing pseudoscientific and moralistic rationalizations.

The conclusion of this chapter shows

perhaps better than anything else the manner in which the author kills his own attempts to arrive at a functional concept in medicine:

This concept of vulnerable foci automatically substitutes the theories of neurotic, functional and organic disease. It implies that whether the disease reaction is physical, or only quasi-physical, it will express itself primarily through the vulnerable organ. The latter is therefore to be regarded as of more fundamental importance in producing disease.

Finally we must not forget that our best efforts in preventive medicine are forcing on us this gospel of vulnerable foci. When we recognize the pre-choreaic or the pre-dyspeptic child we are merely separating into groups cases where strain transmitted by and inflicted on the central nervous system finds in the one case a vulnerable corpus striatum and in the other a stomach innately weak.

What we need is not the replacing of the theories of neurotic, functional and organic disease, but a revision and understanding of them by means of a clinically valid concept of the functioning of biological energy. This concept has been provided by sex-economic investigation. If disease is understood as the result of a disturbance of this biological energy function, it becomes quite immaterial whether this disturbance shows itself in this or that organ. Moreover, whether it shows itself in one or the other organ is not determined by any "special vulnerability" of this or that organ but by the particular physiological mechanism of repression which the organism employs in a particular case. What is fundamental, then, is the disturbance of biological functioning, and not a supposedly "vulnerable" organ. If, for example, a patient with anxiety neurosis shows tachycardia or extrasystoles, this has nothing whatsoever to do with a "vulnerable heart" or "vulnerable

cardiovascular system." It means merely that energy which is dammed up because of a disturbed genital function produces vegetative symptoms such as tachycardia or extrasystoles. The etiology, and the treatment, would be exactly the same if the symptoms happened to be diarrhea or muscular tremor, symptoms which in no way would indicate a "vulnerable intestine" or a "vulnerable muscular system." A woman who develops fibroids, and perhaps cancer, of the uterus, does not do so because her uterus is "vulnerable" but because, in order to suppress the genital sensations of which she has become afraid, she chronically contracts her pelvic floor and her uterine musculature, thus interfering with the normal flow of biological energy in these regions.

The "gospel of vulnerable foci," then, is a dangerously misleading one. It detracts from the basic biological functioning and centers our attention again on the individual organ, thus reverting to a mechanistic concept which medicine, for decades, has been trying to outgrow. No, preventive medicine does not force this gospel on us. On the contrary, if there are "vulnerable organs," "innate flaws" and other such God-given things, there does not seem much hope for preventive medicine in the fields here considered. The preventive medicine of the future will have to see to it that the disturbances of basic biological functioning are prevented. This means: no compulsive feeding of infants, no compulsive sphincter training, no suppression of infantile and adolescent masturbation; in other words, a different kind of upbringing. This, in turn, depends, of course, on a different kind of social system. This will not be a system thought up by doctors or social reformers but one brought about by society itself once society realizes that it keeps chopping off the biological branch on which it sits.

Chapter Eight is entitled DISEASE AS DIS-

HARMONY. THE AUTONOMIC NERVOUS SYSTEM. Here, the author states:

It can indeed be said that recognition of the importance of autonomic dysfunction in physical disease is a criterion of the progressive evolution of medicine.

True, as far as it goes. The importance of autonomic dysfunction has been increasingly recognized in recent decades; physiology and medicine have amassed a tremendous amount of material concerning the functioning and the dysfunctioning of the autonomic system. This has resulted in a situation of utter confusion in which nobody sees the woods for all the trees. In present-day medicine and physiology, these facts remain unrelated and seem often contradictory. They can be understood only on the basis of the basic antithesis of vegetative life as formulated by Reich², that is, in their relation to the basic antithesis of sexuality and anxiety. The author's attempts at finding his way in the maze of autonomic phenomena, lacking this orientation, are, correspondingly, unsuccessful. He speaks of autonomic imbalance as a given fact without asking the question where it comes from; a question which sex-economic investigation has answered beyond any doubt. It comes from sexual stasis. Instead, the author speaks of "innate functional imbalance" which "provides a groundwork for an immediate half-physical response to strain," "innate differences in the vegetative nervous system in different individuals," etc., and from such metaphysical formulations arrives logically at such loose conceptions as that of "disease as a general disharmony of the whole psyche," "the connection between autonomic function and the higher centres of the central nervous system," "fundamental tendencies to imbalance."

On the basis of such concepts, one can,

² Wilhelm Reich, *Der Urgegensatz des vegetativen Lebens*, 1934.

of course, not arrive at any rational and causal therapy. "Treatment in the future," the author writes, "will return to the Greek ideal of something like an enlightened spa regime . . . Now rest is of absolutely fundamental importance in treating vegetative imbalance." One might ask, how it is possible to "rest" for a patient with anxiety neurosis, with violent anxiety, with tachycardia and extrasystoles, unless one removes the sexual stasis which causes these symptoms of vegetative disequilibrium? "Even now," the author continues, "despite the current enormous activity in the pharmacological aspect of therapeutics, we have produced few drugs capable of acting with efficacy on the autonomic system." There is a good reason for this, the same reason for which it can be safely predicted that there never will be any such drugs. In fact, the "current enormous activity" in the pharmacological field, the enthusiasm with which physicians dispense such drugs and the pathetic eagerness with which patients consume them, are only an expression of the prevailing therapeutic helplessness in the face of disturbances of the autonomic life system. There are, of course, drugs with a very pronounced effect on the vegetative system; but they have only a transitory effect and the therapeutic result can be only symptomatic. Drugs can never cure vegetative imbalance. There is only one cure for it, and that is the removal of the cause, sexual stasis. To the author, such cure—which is indeed inconceivable without the establishment of orgasmic potency—seems altogether inconceivable; he does not even think of it. He thinks, typically, only of *controlling* imbalance. "It is of considerable significance that while we have made little attempt to derive means of controlling imbalance," he writes, "in the sensuous and fatalistic East they have progressed far in achieving such control. The system of Yogi has undoubtedly achieved remarkable results

in this direction." No doubt, it has. But is this the kind of results which we want to achieve? Do we want to institute a system which has only one aim, that of deadening vegetative sensations, a system in which a major part of the biological energy is used up in keeping the rest of it in repression? Do we want the balance of nothingness? No, instead of advocating such life-killing procedures, we should realize that, in fact, the difference between East and West, as far as the regulation of biological energy is concerned, is far from being as great as it may seem. What, for example, is the difference between Yogi concepts and the Western "mortification of the flesh"? What is the difference between Yogi practices and the practices which our children use in an attempt to get rid of their vegetative sensations which may lead to masturbation and other sex play which is threatened with punishment? They hold their breath, they stiffen their abdominal muscles, they "keep a stiff upper lip," they pull up their pelvic floor, in short, they engage in all kinds of practices of vegetative control which Reich, correctly, called a kind of universal Yoga method. It is clear, then, that there is only one way of *preventing* autonomic imbalance: that of safeguarding vegetative motility in the child. The most important aspect of our education is exactly the opposite, that of suppressing vegetative motility. Children are constantly exhorted to "pull their shoulders back," to "pull their stomachs in," to "keep their mouths closed," etc.; that is, they are encouraged to and threatened into establishing and maintaining bodily attitudes which are incompatible with vegetative balance. It is clear that when autonomic imbalance once is established, it can be eliminated only by eliminating these muscular attitudes. This cannot be done by "spa treatment," mechanical relaxation or drugs, but only by the establishment of orgasmic potency.

The author does discuss "the relation

between sex and autonomic activity." The discussion, however, is limited to meaningless phrases about the connection between central nervous system and autonomic system:

The instigation of desire depends on the central nervous system. Desire is roused through the senses. Impressions from these are relayed to the central nervous system. The activation of desire is achieved by autonomic activity. Sexual activity is the supreme example of the correlated activity of the two systems. It is a total reaction of the psyche. . . . It is a kind of mass reflex of the whole personality of man.

Now, which is it? A total reaction of "the psyche"? Or "a kind of mass reflex of the whole personality"? And if the latter, what kind of a mass reflex? It all depends on whether this is just a turn of speech or a tangible biological reality as described by Reich as the orgasm reflex.

Chapter Nine, *THE NEUROPATHIC ORIGIN OF DISEASE*, starts out from the following premise:

There are four types of disease where heredity plays an important role. These are mental defect, mental disease, the psychoneuroses and what we have called the strain diseases.

The rest of the chapter consists mostly of a reiteration, in different forms, of this erroneous premise, and of futile attempts to prove it. Sentences like, "In the psychoses heredity is again the most important etiological factor" belong in 19th-century textbooks and not in a contemporary book on "Disease and the Social System." As to neuroses, the author states:

Former opinion believed that the neuroses were attributable to an innately impoverished vitality of the central nervous system. With the advent of Freudian

analysis environmental factors were considered of greater importance. Even Freudians now admit in increasing numbers that infantile experience and environmental factors merely determine the nature of the neurosis and the content of the symptoms shown. We cling to the illusion that neurosis is caused by circumstance and so more accessible to cure, to hide the brutal truth of heredity from our patients and ourselves. Millions are exposed to adverse parental influences and exposed to shocks. Only a proportion succumb to neurosis. This latter fraction is attributable to predisposition.

The increase in neurosis is so truly appalling that it may be a fatal factor inducing national decadence. In fifty per cent of individuals the family history, covering no more than three generations, will provide at least one indisputable case of neurosis.

The author then quotes several family investigations showing an incidence of 25% of severe nervous disorder, going up to 50% including such conditions as alcoholism and eccentricity. Now, the enormous incidence of neurosis is a well-known fact which needs no further substantiation. Reich has shown that the important factor in the neurosis is not the symptoms but the characterological reaction basis, that, in other words, the disturbance of biological functioning is just as severe in character neuroses as in so-called symptom neuroses. The appearance of symptoms means merely that the character defense mechanisms have proven insufficient. Obviously, any such investigation by questionnaire will reveal only the patent symptom neuroses; people will not record the character neuroses of which they are unaware. If we include these also, the incidence of neurosis in the general population is, of course, much higher than 50%; it is as high as the incidence of orgasmic impotence which is found in well over 80% of the people.

All this proves nothing as far as hered-

ity is concerned. If it be true that "even Freudians now admit in increasing numbers that infantile experience and environmental factors merely determine the nature of the neurosis and the content of the symptoms shown," does that provide any proof for hereditarian contentions? No. The recourse to hereditarian assumptions is almost always an alibi. In the case of psychoanalysis, the reason for this alibi is patent. Here, the regression to heredity took the form of the theory of the death instinct, the assumption of a biological, or, to use the favorite word of our author, "innate" tendency to suffer and die. This theory has been shown to be erroneous³. It is a twofold alibi: a) an alibi for therapeutic helplessness, specifically, the inability to master the patient's orgasm anxiety and masochistic reactions, and to bring about orgasmic potency; instead of having to blame himself for his therapeutic inability, the therapist can blame an "innate tendency" in the patient. b) It is an alibi for not criticizing the social conditions which create the neuroses; if the patient develops a neurosis not because of living in a society which suppresses his normal genitality but because he has an "innate tendency" to suffer, we are relieved of the necessity of social criticism which does not make for friends.

Thus, we do *not* "cling to the illusion that neurosis is caused by circumstance and so more accessible to cure, to hide the brutal truth of heredity from our patients and ourselves." No, we cling to the *illusion of heredity* to hide the brutal truth from our patients and ourselves that the neuroses—supported as they are, on all sides, by our social system—are a very difficult therapeutic problem and that it is our social system which causes them. If "millions are exposed to adverse parental influences . . ." and "only a proportion suc-

³ Cf. Wilhelm Reich, *THE FUNCTION OF THE ORGASM*, 1942, and *The Masochistic Character*, *This Journal* 3, 1944, 38-61.

cumb to neurosis," it does not follow that "this latter fraction is attributable to predisposition." For one thing, as already mentioned, this fraction is much larger than the author assumes if, as we must, we include the almost universal character neurosis. The question is, why do a small fraction of people *not* become neurotic? Not because they lack the "heredity predisposition" of the others; not even because they were not exposed to infantile trauma and an authoritarian education; but because, in spite of all this, they found their way, relatively early in life, into a normal genital life.

One must agree with the author that "the increase in neurosis is so truly appalling that it may be a fatal factor inducing national decadence." One can rightly go further and say that the prevailing character neurosis, the biological rigidity of man, is the basis of the present international disaster.

The whole argument of our author is really based on the assumption of a "diminished resistance of the nervous system," an assumption which is purely metaphysical in character. This assumption is based, essentially, on the old mechanistic concept of the role played by the central nervous system. "These hereditary nervous conditions," he writes, "are those who have risen vastly in incidence in the last century. During the same period the tempo of life has quickened. Man is more chronically anxious. Such psychological factors can only be received and transmitted by the central nervous system." Here is the old confusion of cause and mechanism. The central nervous system is conceived of in terms of a telephone exchange with incoming and outgoing wires which transmit impulses, commands, etc. Now, suppose I were to call the author on the telephone and tell him what I think about his book. If I tell him that I like his unorthodox approach to medicine, his aphorisms about the "test-

tube doctors," etc., he will be pleased. If I tell him that I am disgusted with his brain mythology, his hereditarian alibis, his "innate tendencies," he will be displeased; perhaps he will get a rise in blood pressure and pulse rate. Would he think of blaming the telephone system for his reactions because it has "received and transmitted" my remarks? Yet, undoubtedly, they were received and transmitted by the telephone system. His pleasure and displeasure, his vegetative reactions at hearing my remarks, however, were caused by the content of my remarks; the telephone system has no more to do with them than that it has received and transmitted them. So it is with the central nervous system. It is no more than a receiving-and-transmitting mechanism, and not even the most important one at that. But the author goes on, page after page, about indications "that the vitality of the nervous system and its resistance to disease is steadily diminishing," and "evidence of the increasing vulnerability of the nervous system." He speaks of "mental excesses," "over-mentation" and thinks that "the simple factor of over-use is leading to decay [of the nervous system]," that "intellectual activity is a causative factor in such conditions [as migraine]."

Part Three of the book deals with "Social, Spiritual and Sensuous Factors," beginning with a chapter on SOCIAL PATHOLOGY.

The strain diseases are going up. The adjustment of the strain factor is the major problem in medicine. Infections are less. We are told we are healthier. Infant mortality is down. This paves the way for statistical triumphs. Statisticians are thus enabled to give false conceptions of our life prospects. A century ago a large proportion of children died in the first two years of life. Today the vast majority survive. This does not indicate increasing health. We must beware of subtle finesse with rows of figures.

Strain conditions like peptic ulcer, hyperthyroidism, rheumatism, arteriosclerosis, are rising in incidence. They occur at an earlier age. In our day their symptoms are ameliorated by the newer drugs. But the addition of a year or two of life to chronic invalids is not necessarily a sign of a country's increasing health.

Precisely. We have practically obliterated plagues like cholera, smallpox and diphtheria, but the diseases involving vegetative imbalance, the neuroses, cardiovascular disease and cancer, are increasing and medicine is unable to stem their rising tide. While the plagues accounted for a high mortality, these diseases account for a high morbidity, for invalidism and general unhappiness, for the inability to function fully and happily.

Now, after having spoken of strain and strain diseases for some hundred-odd pages, the author remembers, in the tenth chapter, that "we have not yet defined the origin and nature of this strain." He then proceeds to define it under the following headings: Disease and the rate of living; Industrial factors in disease; Change of occupation as a cause of disease; and Disease and the creative impulse. Now, there can, of course, be no doubt that "the increased pace of modern life," speed-up systems in industry, the adaptation to a new occupation, and the monotony of industrial work are, or can be, pathogenic factors. But the fact must be realized that these are only contributing—or precipitating—factors which would not in themselves be pathogenic were they not superimposed on more basic processes. True, the author states explicitly that he does not consider them the exclusive pathogenic factors; yet, they comprise his definition of "strain." Understandably enough, this does not seem wholly satisfactory to him; there must be something more fundamental. And so, at the end of the chapter he goes back to—the reader may have guessed it—the

"innate tendency," the neuropathic personality:

We are developing more neuropathic personalities, but we must learn to use the word neuropathic in a wider sense. Formerly it implied a tendency to psychoneurosis. In the future it will convey merely the tendency of a vulnerable nervous system to transmit external strains. Through the nervous system these stresses cause abreactions in different links of the endocrine-autonomic chain. Physical, mental and neurotic diseases are alternative expressions of the fundamental common denominator of strain.

This leaves us exactly where we were at the beginning of the chapter: "Strain diseases" are explained by a "tendency of a vulnerable nervous system" and by strain. This is pure tautology. It is also metaphysics: a nervous system, vulnerable or not, has no "tendencies." It is to be hoped that we not only learn *not* to use the word "neuropathic" in a wider sense, but to throw it out of medical terminology altogether. It is an anachronism, a relic from the period of brain mythology when it was believed that neuroses are a "disease of the nerves." This concept was proven to be entirely erroneous, as is known today to every enlightened layman, though the concept is kept alive by neurologists and the makers of "nerve medicines," for obvious reasons. If, now, the concept of "neuropathy" should be extended from the neuroses to those diseases which the author calls "strain diseases," this would block the way to an understanding of these diseases as thoroughly as the brain-mythological concept blocked the way to an understanding of the neuroses. Our author, as we have seen, devotes in fact a whole chapter to the "neuropathic origin of disease."

Generally speaking, the diseases which the author calls "strain diseases" belong

in the category of what Reich described as *biopathies*. Ah, some will say, just another of those words. No, this concept has a very definite meaning: Biopathies are disturbances of the biological function of pulsation in the total organism. This disturbance can be demonstrated in great detail not only clinically, but by laboratory observation and tests. This is not the place to discuss these findings. The reader must be referred to Reich's article, "The carcinomatous shrinking biopathy," *This Journal* 1, 1942, 131ff. I merely wished to point out that it is the ignorance of this basic biological process which leads to such rationalizations as "neuropathic tendencies" and "vulnerable nervous system."

In the following chapter, *SENSUOUS FACTORS IN DISEASE*, the author again asks the question, "What do we mean by strain?" and states, "Like life, like consciousness, it is difficult to define in strict metaphysical terms." As the author continually proves, it is even more difficult to define in strict *scientific* terms. At this point, the author tries to define strain "by finding some universally beneficial factor towards which it acts as an antagonist . . . There is one answer, and one only—rest." With that, he gets himself really into trouble, for his definitions of rest are just as vague as those of "strain." "Rest," says the author, "is the one sound antagonist to strain." But he fails to make clear what "rest" is. The section on "The therapy of repose" contains such statements as, "Health is an attribute of the whole psyche. It is a sensuous subjective state." Now, health as well as disease, as one would gather from many others of the author's statements, is not an attribute of the psyche, but of the total organism. Furthermore, it certainly is not a subjective state. Many individuals, with severe neuroses and psychoses, consider themselves subjectively healthy; many orgasmically impotent individuals with a pathological

erective potency, for example, consider themselves "particularly healthy" sexually, and many men with premature ejaculation similarly brag about their "being hot." I have seen any number of cases of women who were referred to the psychiatric clinic from other departments of the hospital whose case history carried the entry: "Sex life—normal." On being questioned about their sex life, and what they meant by a "normal" sex life, they would answer: "He don't bother me much that way." Subjectively, that was satisfactory to these women—because they were frigid; all they wanted was not to be bothered by sexual intercourse. Objectively, the story is a different one. Why did they consult the medical or gynecological clinic in the first place, and why were they referred to the psychiatric clinic from there? Because, no matter how they felt about it subjectively, their sexual stasis had resulted in their headaches, backaches or whatever it was that made them seek medical help. All this begins to make sense if we replace such concepts as "strain" by "disturbance of the biological function of pulsation." This disturbance cannot be cured by "rest" but only by the removal of this disturbance, by the establishment of orgasmic potency which alone guarantees vegetative equilibrium. That this is not possible in a great majority of cases is another matter. This fact should be faced squarely. To escape into the assumption of a "vulnerable nervous system" will do no more good than the assumption of a "death wish" or the "innate sinfulness of man." This fact points far beyond the field of medicine: the biopathies will continue to increase as long as education and the major social institutions make normal biological functioning impossible through an antisexual upbringing and life-inimical moralism.

In the ensuing section, "Sensuousness and Purpose," the author states, "To the average man coitus is his greatest pleas-

ure. Its completion affords him his greatest peace." One only could wish that were so. But if one considers the prevalence of orgasmic impotence, one must doubt the correctness of this statement. The average man being orgasmically impotent, it would be safer to state that his greatest pleasure lies in substitute gratifications such as making money or acquiring power. And what about the average woman? To her, certainly, coitus is not the greatest pleasure. In spite of all the author says about the importance of relaxation through sexual gratification, he is plainly unaware of the basic biological role of sexuality, for he states: "One day sex activity may be less necessary to us than it is now. We may be able to induce in ourselves deliberately states of repose which are at present most commonly procured by the relaxing mechanism of coitus." Even if that were conceivable, biologically, one may ask why on earth anybody should prefer such "deliberate induction of repose" to the pleasure of orgasmic satisfaction! Relaxation, the author says, is "the basis of all repose . . . We would not so often wake with backache if the muscles of our lumbar spine, the constant indicator of exhausted man, did not maintain in sleep their abnormal tension." But why do they maintain it? Not because they are the "constant indicator of exhausted man," but the constant indicator of genital anxiety; because, if this tension were released even in sleep, the vegetative genital sensations of which the sex-negative individual has become afraid, would break through and would cause anxiety.

Taken all in all, one can well agree with the author as far as the general thesis of this section is concerned: basically, it is an affirmation of the pleasure principle and the recognition of the fact that the inhibition of pleasure creates disease. But in order to make this thesis scientifically valid, pleasure has to be understood not in psychological and subjective terms but

in the objective terms of biological pulsation, that is, the undisturbed alternation of pleasurable contraction and expansion.

In the following chapter, *SPIRITUAL FACTORS IN DISEASE*, the author expresses the belief "that the current uneasiness and scepticism as to the destiny and purpose of individual man and mankind as a whole, are of themselves factors initiating illness or determining its nature . . . Philosophic and religious doubting are potent factors in causing sickness." No, such doubting is not the cause, it is a *symptom* of disease. No individual who is happy in his love life and engaged in rational work has such doubts. "There is far less neurosis in people with a firm dogmatic religion, like Roman Catholicism, than in vague creeds like Anglicanism," says the author. That may be true if by "neurosis" is meant a manifest symptom neurosis. But an individual who adheres to a firm dogmatic religion will also be found to have a more rigid character armor; he may exhibit fewer neurotic symptoms, but he is no less—or even more—afraid of life and resigned to find happiness in a hereafter. . . . "Protestantism . . . implies a state of conflict." But where there is—still—conflict, there is much more likely to be insight and an incentive to cure. Under the heading of "Health and Religion" the author refers again to Eastern religions with their fatalism, not realizing that their fatalism is no less life-negating than the more aggressive Western religions. Under the heading "Health and Philosophy" the author contributes his bit in the currently so fashionable pastime of endowing "nations" with psychoses: "The pogroms, the episodic ferocity of the Huns, resemble the state of catatonic excitement in dementia praecox." One could only wish that mass-psychological problems were as simple as such facile bon mots suggest.

In Chapter Thirteen, *NEUROSIS AND THE INHERITANCE OF TRAITS OF CHARACTER*, the

author points to "the rising toll not only of the chronic constitutional diseases but the enormous growth of neurosis" and asks, "is there any prospect of reducing the incidence of neurosis?" It is true, of course, that psychoanalytic treatment is not possible on a mass basis, but that has nothing at all to do with its effectiveness or ineffectiveness as an individual therapy. Unsatisfactory as the results of psychoanalysis are in general, one can hardly say that "rational explanations added to old-fashioned prescriptions as to rest, exercise and occupation will give better results in the majority of cases than psychoanalysis," or that "a month in Switzerland may wholly change" a neurotic's view. The author believes in "the unalterable nature of most neuroses . . . The Freudian and Adlerian theories are of immense scientific and philosophical value. It is our own fault we have so misused them. We had far better have applied ourselves to using their findings to devise a social order less likely to impose undue strain. . . ." What is correct here is that Freud did not draw the social conclusions from his basic finding that it is social sexual suppression which creates the neuroses but evaded them by creating a cultural philosophy. But the author not only fails to indicate what a different, less pathogenic social order should be like, he even turns the clock backwards to pre-Freudian times: "The psychoanalytic teaching largely denied the influence of heredity in predisposing to neurosis. But . . . the hereditary factor is still of first importance." Quite illogically, the author continues: "We will do our best work by altering the pattern of existence for the whole community." He neither indicates what earthly good that could do if "the hereditary factor is of the first importance," nor does he say how the pattern of existence should or could be altered. Instead, he asks, "Can we do anything for the neurotics at present existing among

us?" He thinks we can help "to build character," by "encouraging the patients to practise systematically the exercise of will." This is called "character formation as a treatment of individual neurotics, as opposed to the doctrine of analysis without synthesis." The real reason for the author's diatribe against psychoanalysis—in which, it is true, many correct criticisms are made of psychoanalysis, although for the wrong reason—is evident from the following:

My action is, of course, criminal from the psychoanalytic standpoint. I add to their load of repression. But unfortunately maturity is integral with a certain degree of repression. We must necessarily restrict the reactions of childhood. . . . Man has learnt throughout the ages that civilization implies the governing of the lower by the higher nature. . . . The wide and too fervent practice of psychoanalysis might even involve a considerable threat to the best aspects of the moral order. It opens the floodgates of civilized repression.

That is, the diatribe against psychoanalysis has nothing whatsoever to do with its therapeutic effectiveness or ineffectiveness; it is motivated, purely and simply, by the fear of sexual and moral chaos. The author overlooks the fact that psychoanalysis long since has made certain that no such accusations could possibly be leveled at it: with the theory of sublimation and condemnation of the instinct, with the theory of the death instinct and with the postulate that therapy should adjust the patient to his environment. It is true, "We must necessarily restrict the reactions of childhood." But why? Because in the child with an average upbringing, these reactions are essentially unhealthy. They are unhealthy as a result of the suppression of normal, healthy instincts. If the primary instincts had not been suppressed, there would be no secondary, unhealthy drives to be suppressed,

and "the reactions of childhood," to the extent to which they do not fit adult life, would be automatically outgrown. It is not true that "maturity is integral with a certain degree of repression." On the contrary, it is the individual with repressions who "never grows up" and keeps displaying infantile reactions. The mature individual is not so because of repressions. On the contrary, he is so because he has no secondary drives to speak of which he has to keep in repression. The statement that "civilization implies the governing of the lower by the higher nature" means that sexuality is something low and base and must be suppressed in favor of "higher things" whatever that may be. To see what kind of "civilization" sexual suppression leads to we only have to look around us. Primitive societies, on the other hand, as e.g., the Trobrianders, where sexuality is not debased and not suppressed, have a far higher "civilization" than we if by civilization is meant the absence of neurosis, psychosis, perversion and crime. True, if in our society all moral restrictions were suddenly lifted, there would be moral and sexual chaos because the "opening of the floodgates of civilized repression" would release all the secondary drives of destructiveness, sadism, lasciviousness, jealousy and pathological envy. But the moralists need have no fear: psychoanalysis could not open these floodgates even if it wanted to; the fear and inhibition of the instincts is too deeply anchored in the character structure for that. Those who are afraid of the sexual chaos consistently overlook the fact that the conditions we have are already chaotic, as a result of the very "higher morality" on which they insist: adolescent sexual misery and juvenile delinquency, compulsive fidelity and infidelity, sexual brutality, perversions and all the other ornaments of "civilization."

But to go back to our author and his suggestions for the prevention of neu-

roses. He thinks that whether or not we will be able to deal with this problem "depends on whether or no we believe in the transmission of traits of character . . . If we believe in the hereditary transmission of character traits it is of considerable importance from the social point of view to encourage positive character formation in neurotics . . . The formation and practice of good or bad social habits tends to their continuance. And what we have developed tends to be transmitted." This is so utterly naïve and unrealistic that it does not even deserve discussion. Such statements seem to be motivated by the author's overevaluation of heredity, his resentment against psychoanalysis, and his desire to avoid social criticism. So, while the author starts out by stating that the neuroses could be best prevented by "altering the pattern of existence for the whole community," he ends up in hereditarian mysticism.

On the subject of MEDICAL TRAINING, the author states:

It is very necessary to study deficiencies in our training as students and our attitude as doctors. We are more than anyone responsible for erroneous concepts of disease. If we are to help as reformers of our social system it is necessary that our training helps us to recognise its flaws.

The author then discusses at some length some flaws in medical education and practice, such as the fact that textbooks of medicine do not mention the personality factor in such diseases as peptic ulcer; the decline of clinical standards as a result of expert and accessible laboratory technique; and many others. Correct as many or all of these criticisms and suggestions may be, they are not the decisive point. As sex-economic and orgone-biophysical research has clearly shown, the reason for the traditional failure of medicine in the most common diseases, such as colds, hypertension, cancer, rheuma-

tism, in brief, in all the biopathies, is its mechanistic thinking and practice. "There must be a radical alteration in medical education," says our author. About that, there can be no doubt. But not along the lines suggested by the author: "Medicine is an art. It must be taught as such." No, medicine is not an art, it is a science, but a mechanistic, unalive one. Neither should it be an art, whatever that is if applied to medicine. It should be a science but one based on a functional energy concept. Then, and only then, will the author's prediction come true: "The medicine of the future will simplify the present hotch-potch of diseases into far fewer biological reactions than we contemplate at present."

In a chapter on *THE NATURE OF HEALTH* the author expounds the peculiar theory that "health is essentially a feeling, a complex subjective sensation." It should be obvious that the subjective sensation of health is nothing but the reflection of objective biological processes, and that health, therefore, can be defined only objectively. Thus far, the only such definition is the sex-economic one. As Reich put it in *THE FUNCTION OF THE ORGASM*, "There is no doubt that the basic criterion of psychic and vegetative health is the ability of the organism to act and react, as a unit and as a totality, in terms of the biological functions of tension and charge." In this chapter, the author discusses the influence on health of fresh air, rest, exercise, dietetic factors, climate, modern living and relaxation, but says nothing further about "the nature of health."

In the final chapter, *SIGNPOSTS*, the author gives "the broadest summary of society's needs." Pointing out that he has urged the need for more pleasure, rest and relaxation; that mankind be freed from the bane of insecurity; that man should be allowed to acquire the art of living and should be freed from the shackles of organized religion and self-

delusion, he states that the attainment of these goals depends on the political necessity of a proper peace.

Such a peace should be a suitable prelude to the biological reconstruction of the world. Its terms should be based primarily on the major traits of German psychology. We are dealing with a people retarded emotionally. . . . Their activities are at the thalamic level. . . . I hope sincerely and unemotionally that the brains of their super thugs be preserved for pathological examination. This would be a primary war aim in a rational world. . . . This nation from every standpoint of humane biological evolution is to be regarded as offal. They may be curable, in the course of many generations, by moral precept backed ruthlessly by force, but in dealing with them we should remember that it is necessary for us to go back some hundred years in our methods of correction, since otherwise the whole world will be darkened for a thousand years. . . . I regret that I see no prospect of truly rational therapy. Sterilisation is the most humane and efficacious method of dealing with thalamic men.

It is only to be hoped that people who have such naive concepts of fascism, such brain-mythological concepts as "thalamic man," who want to turn the clock of scientific insight back some hundred years and who advocate fascist measures on the basis of their brain-mythological concepts, will have little to say in the making of the peace. To make such frivolous proposals is easy; to gain insight into the tremendous problems of mass psychology is another matter.⁴ It is true, in the following pages the author mentions some of these problems: "Man has never accepted the responsibility for shaping the pattern of his life . . . Man has always accepted the external direction of his life. It must

⁴ Cf., e.g., W. Reich, *DIE MASSENPSYCHOLOGIE DES FASCHISMUS*, and "Fascist Irrationalism," *THE FUNCTION OF THE ORGASM*, p. 203ff.

come from within . . . Government of the people, for the people and by the people, has never existed. What we have known is government of the inarticulate by the vocal . . . As men we dread much. Most of all we fear freedom . . . Men hate freedom because it is a too-responsible state." Yes, all this is absolutely correct. But that is precisely where the problem begins, first of all with the question, "*Why* is all this so?" The answer lies in the biological rigidity of man, and in the functional

identity of social structure and character structure. Once one realizes the magnitude of this problem one is forever cured of making glib proposals and of the temptation to play the social reformer.

"But most of all we, as doctors, must insist on playing a major part in the cure of a sick world," says our author. The first prerequisite for cure, however, is correct diagnosis, be the patient an individual or the world.

SEX EDUCATION IN THE SCHOOLS*

By PAUL MARTIN†, M.D.

Editor's Note: The problem of sex education has recently come into prominence again, mainly for two reasons. One is a general trend toward increased frankness in sexual matters, vague and confused though this trend may be. The other is the increase in "juvenile delinquency," particularly in the sexual realm, which has forced the problem on people's attention. The striking thing about all the discussions of sex education is that they inevitably lead into a blind alley. What is even more striking is that nobody seems to see a problem in this very fact. This fact will undoubtedly continue to exist until a basic reorientation on a broad social basis takes place, a reorientation not primarily with regard to sex education but with regard to sexuality itself. We publish the following communication—which was written several years ago—because it points out where the basic problem lies, the problem which will have to be solved before any rational, that is, positive and helpful sex education will be possible.—T. P. W.

Even progressive educators often state that the problem of sex education can be solved by furnishing the child, at the age of about 8 or 9 years, with information on sex, "along the lines of information about the digestive processes," etc., supplemented later by "a brief and factual description of pregnancy, of venereal disease, and of the existing preventive methods." One can agree with a good many of these proposals when they concern themselves with actual sex education. But it seems to me that on the whole they show to what small degree the results of psychoanalytic and sex-economic research in this field have been put to use. I have the impression that circles concerned with sex education have not changed their views on this subject. They still believe that "if only the civic authorities would give their support, the teachers would be able to handle the problem."

As far as pregnancy and venereal disease are concerned, one can agree with the above, as long as the pupils are not frightened too much. It is also quite correct to

place the biology of sex in the foreground. But we must remember that the sexual function cannot be put side by side with the other physiological functions of the body, and such a comparison often strikes people as repulsive. Actually, what we are concerned with is a person's ability to live, primarily his ability to experience desire, joy, and satisfaction in love. It is all the more important to stress this, since today there exists, more strongly than before, a tendency to resolve the whole problem into one of reproduction, or into a race problem, while few people strive to prevent sexual repressions and their results in the form of all kind of nervous illness. All of this suffering has its deepest roots in the fact that people lack the ability to attain a full and happy sex life. Today a person's sex life is seldom completely happy; more often it is the source of unhappiness and separation, nervous suffering and unwanted children.

When we, as progressive educators, consider this question, therefore, we are talking about nothing more nor less than the love life and happiness of humanity. From this point of view it is clear why "factual information," placing the question of sex

* Translated by Marika Meyerson.

† *Editor's note:* This is a pseudonym. Present conditions force us, unfortunately, to withhold the names of our European co-workers.

education in the same class with race problems or reproduction, is often harmful and confusing. Indirectly it aids and abets a system of suppression and that particular form of education which, often unconsciously, pictures sex as sinful, harmful, or as a luxury that keeps the lower classes from struggling for a better life. We live today in an atmosphere of antisexual, moralistic and often ascetic prejudices and conceptions. This atmosphere is, on the whole, counteracted by nothing more than a vague desire to change it and find something better. This desire is found particularly among young people. It lacks leadership and receives little or no support among older people. Progressive educators can and must help. They must accept the challenge of this problem, since modern scientific psychology and study of human character structure have shown that the problem of sexual reform is the basic one in all cultural problems: morals, religion, nationalism, and prejudices, asceticism and, first and last, the submission to authority and the craving for leadership—all these things have their roots, for the individual as well as for the masses, in sexual suppression. Historically, this suppression developed simultaneously with the economic suppression which came with the transition from matriarchy to patriarchy. This fact emphasizes the basic importance of the economic factors. But at the same time it shows that the way in which these factors mold human structure, ideology and culture, is primarily by sexual suppression.

If, then, we want to fight against intellectual reactionaries, we must fight for the liberation of the sex life. We must, as well as we can, help people to achieve the highest joy and satisfaction in love. This goal corresponds exactly to the goal of the real educator who has the courage to make the well-being of the children his only aim.

And how can it be done? Here we face, among other problems, the question of sex education. First we must ourselves know the prerequisites of a happy and satisfying sex life. We may divide it into two parts, the inner and outer. For a healthy sex life you must have two partners, both unrepressed and free enough to be able to surrender themselves completely. The outer circumstances include, first and foremost, living conditions that make it possible for them to be together, nude, without the danger of interruptions; and a contraceptive technique that will not hinder the act of surrender (such as coitus interruptus), or take away some of the pleasure (such as condoms). It must be a technique that can be relied upon; today that means a pessary.

I repeat: the goal of education is that of preserving the young person's ability to experience love and to surrender himself or herself to it. This goal coincides with that of educating people to use their common sense and not to bow blindly to authority, of bringing up young people so as to make them able to escape nervousness and neuroses and to gain happiness.

Most important is pre-school education, particularly with regard to masturbation and sexual play. But we need to go far beyond this: to the education of the entire family. Reich has shown that present-day family upbringing is patriarchal, authoritarian and sexually repressive. We must create an environment in which the child can live his own life and have his own sex life. What forms it will take, we do not yet know; only the future can tell. We must fight against everything that portrays sex as something dirty, or merely as a reproductive process, no matter if this idea is supported by the state, the schools, the church or the parents, and whether or not it appears in the form of direct repression or that of "sex education."

We must, therefore, give a *sex education that will act as a liberating force,*

affirming life and sexuality. The last is decisive. We must ask of all sex education: does it increase or does it lessen sexual anxiety? Does it free the real life forces? Or does it make people retreat more than ever into themselves? As it now stands, practically all sex education increases anxiety and makes sex seem repulsive. As far as schools go, I know of only one—in spite of assiduous search—where sex education has not, on the whole, merely increased the fear of sex. This is not surprising since sex education today rests in the hands of people who—the best of intentions notwithstanding—try to further the officially supported sexual ideology: compulsive morality and monogamy, abstinence, etc., as represented by parents and teachers, physicians and religious leaders. For in sex education everything depends upon the spirit in which it is given.

If sex education is to have a liberating influence, therefore, we must find people who can teach it in a manner that will fulfill this goal. It is impossible to say in advance who will be best fitted to teach it, physicians or teachers or parents. There are some few in each group who are able to do it, but the majority are not. I believe we must discover slowly, by experimentation, who can best teach sex education. But it goes without saying that anyone who looks on the sex life of children and adolescents as sinful, as something to be suppressed, is useless as a

teacher and can only do harm. Only those who believe in the right of every person to sexuality and happiness and want to help those who need help—and not merely with fancy words—are fitted for the task. We must realize, also, that the primary goal is that of creating an atmosphere where happiness and the right to a sex life is once more given the prominent place that belongs to it, as it was in primitive matriarchy, and as it will be again in a coming socialist world. We must also realize the feelings of the adolescent as he nears sexual maturity. At this time healthy sexual desires often spring up in the form of vague and half-conscious wishes for sexual love. It is exactly as with a young plant that cannot survive unless the best possible conditions for growth are provided, a plant that can be destroyed completely if it is trod upon.

In short: if you want to build a house, you must not begin with the roof. There is no sense in asking for sex education in the schools or elsewhere, before we know clearly *why* we ask for it, *what* it is going to be given for, and *with what, exactly, it is to deal.* When we have the answers to these questions, and only then, will we discover *how* to create that form of sex education which will serve its function best. And then we will be able to build the house solidly, beginning with the foundation.

NOTES

THE ORGONE ENERGY IN EARLY SCIENTIFIC LITERATURE

A question frequently asked by laymen as well as scientists is, "Why has the orgone not been discovered long ago?" The reader who is familiar with the orgone-biophysical literature will have realized that the discoverer of the orgone has asked himself this question many times. In his "Talks with an electrophysicist" he points out that the belief that the orgone phenomena have not struck any physicist or astronomer thus far is mistaken: (*supra*, p. 142f.):

The atmospheric orgone has been seen and described by hundreds of physicists, astronomers, meteorologists, biologists and chemists. That the orgone was not discovered in a practical way long ago is due to the mechanistic splitting up of the natural sciences, the mechanistic verbalizations which were taken for explanations, and the lack of functional, that is, unitary thinking.

In going through the older literature on physics and natural philosophy one discovers again and again that a great many authors had more than an inkling of the orgone energy; that they described many phenomena which can be understood only on the basis of the fundamental functioning of this energy; and that they failed to discover it only because the investigation of basic biological functioning alone could lead to its discovery.

Following are two quotations from the writings of Newton¹ which illustrate the above exceedingly well (*italics* are ours):

1. LETTER FROM NEWTON TO BOYLE, 1769: "Honoured Sir,

I have so long deferred to send you my

¹ J. W. N. Sullivan: ISAAC NEWTON, 1642-1727. New York, Macmillan, 1938.

thoughts about the physical qualities we spoke of, that did I not esteem myself obliged by promise, I think I should be ashamed to send them at all. The truth is, my notions about things of this kind are so indigested, that I am not well satisfied myself in them; and what I am not satisfied in, I can scarce esteem fit to be communicated to others; especially in natural philosophy, where there is no end of fancying. But because I am indebted to you, and yesterday met with a friend, Mr. Maulyverer, who told me he was going to London, and intended to give you the trouble of a visit, I could not forbear to take the opportunity of conveying this to you by him.

It being only an explication of qualities which you desire of me, I shall set down my apprehensions in the form of suppositions as follows. *And first, I suppose, that there is diffused through all places an aetherial substance, capable of contraction and dilatation, strongly elastic, and, in a word, much like air in all respects, but far more subtile.*

2. I suppose this aether pervades all gross bodies, but yet so as to stand rarer in their pores than in free spaces, and so much the rarer, as their pores are less; and this I suppose (with others) to be the cause why light incident on those bodies is refracted towards the perpendicular; why two well-polished metals cohere in a receiver exhausted of air; why mercury stands sometimes up to the top of a glass pipe, though much higher than thirty inches; and one of the main causes *why the parts of all bodies cohere; also the cause of filtration, and of the rising of water in small glass pipes above the surface of the stagnating water they are dipped into; for I suspect the aether may*

stand rarer, *not only in the insensible pores of bodies, but even in the very sensible cavities of those pipes; and the same principle may cause menstrooms to pervade with violence the pores of the bodies they dissolve, the surrounding aether, as well as the atmosphere, pressing them together.*

3. *I suppose the rarer aether within bodies, and the denser without them, not to be terminated in a mathematical superficies, but to grow gradually into one another; the external aether beginning to grow rarer, and the internal to grow denser, at some little distance from the superficies of the body, and running through all intermediate degrees of density in the intermediate spaces; and this may be the cause why light, in Grimaldo's experiment, passing by the edge of a knife, or other opaque body, is turned aside, and as it were refracted, and by that refraction makes several colors. . . .*

4. *When two bodies moving towards one another come near together, I suppose the aether between them to grow rarer than before, and the spaces of its graduated rarity to extend further from the superficies of the bodies towards one another; and this, by reason that the aether cannot move and play up and down so freely in the strait passage between the bodies, as it could before they came so near together. . . . And as the other body approaches more and more, I suppose the aether between them will grow rarer and rarer. These suppositions I have so described, as if I thought the spaces of graduated aether had precise limits. . . . But really I do not think they have such precise limits, but rather decay insensibly, and, in so decaying, extend to a much greater distance than can easily be believed or need be supposed.*

5. *Now, from the fourth supposition it follows, that when two bodies approaching one another come so near together as to make the aether between them begin to rarify, they will begin to have a re-*

*luctance from being brought nearer together, and an endeavor to recede from one another; which reluctance and endeavor will increase as they come nearer together, because thereby they cause the interjacent aether to rarify more and more. But at length, when they come so near together that the excess of pressure of the external aether which surrounds the bodies, above that of the rarefied aether, which is between them, is so great as to overcome the reluctance which the bodies have from being brought together; then will that excess of pressure drive them with violence together, and make them adhere strongly to one another, as was said in the second supposition. . . . Now hence I conceive it is chiefly that a fly walks on water without wetting her feet, and consequently without touching the water; that two polished pieces of glass are not without pressure brought to contact, no, not though the one be plain, the other a little convex, that the particles of dust cannot by pressing be made to cohere, as they would do, if they did but fully touch; that the particles of tingeing substances and salts dissolved in water do not of their own accord concrete and fall to the bottom, but diffuse themselves all over the liquor, and expand still more if you add more liquor to them. Also, that the particles of vapours, exhalations, and air do stand at a distance from one another, and endeavor to recede as far from one another as the pressure of the incumbent atmosphere will let them; for I conceive the confused mass of vapours, air, and exhalations which we call the atmosphere, to be *nothing else but the particles of all sorts of bodies, of which the earth consists, separated from one another, and kept at a distance by the said principle.**

From these principles the actions of menstrooms upon bodies may be thus explained: suppose any tingeing body, as cochineal or logwood be put into water; so soon as the water sinks into its pores

and wets on all sides any particle which adheres to the body only by the principle in the second supposition, it takes off, or at least much diminishes, the efficacy of that principle to hold the particle to the body, because it makes the aether on all sides the particle to be of a more uniform density than before. And then the particle being shaken off by any little motion, floats in the water, and with many such others makes a tincture; which tincture will be of some lively color, if the particles be all of the same size and density; otherwise of a dirty one. For the colours of all natural bodies whatever seem to depend on nothing but the various sizes and densities of their particles, as I think you have seen described by me more at large in another paper. . . .

Nor does the size only, but the density of the particles also, conduce to the permanency of the aerial substances; for the excess of *density of the aether without such particles above that of the aether within them is still greater*; which has made me sometimes think that the *true permanent air may be of a metallic origina; the particles of no substances being more dense than those of metals. This, I think, is also favored by experience, for I remember I once read in the "Philosophical Transactions," how M. Huygens at Paris, found that the air made by dissolving salt of tartar would in two or three days time condense and fall down again, but the air made by dissolving a metal continued without condensing or relenting in the least.* If you consider then, how by the continual fermentations made in the bowels of the earth there are aerial substances raised out of all kinds of bodies, all which together make the atmosphere, and that of all these the metallic are the most permanent, you will not perhaps think it absurd, that the most permanent part of the atmosphere, which is the true air, should be constituted of these, especially since they are the heaviest of all other, and so

much subside to the lower parts of the atmosphere and float upon the surface of the earth, and buoy up the lighter exhalations and vapours to float in greatest plenty above them. Thus, I say, it ought to be with the metallic exhalations raised in the bowels of the earth by the action of acid menstrooms, and thus it is with the true permanent air; for this, as in reason it ought to be esteemed the most ponderous part of the atmosphere, because the lowest, so it betrays its ponderosity by making vapours ascend readily in it, by sustaining mists and clouds of snow, and by buoying up gross and ponderous smoke. *The air also is the most gross unactive part of the atmosphere, affording living things no nourishment, if deprived of the more tender exhalations and spirits that float in it; and what more unactive and remote from nourishment than metallic bodies?*

I shall set down one conjecture more, which came into my mind now as I was writing this letter; it is about the cause of gravity. For this end I will suppose aether to consist of parts differing from one another in subtilty by indefinite degrees; that in the pores of bodies there is less of the grosser aether, in proportion to the finer, than in open spaces; and consequently, that in the great body of the earth there is much less of the grosser aether, in proportion to the finer, than in the regions of the air; and that yet the grosser aether in the air affects the upper regions of the earth, and the finer aether in the earth the lower regions of the air, in such a manner, that from the top of the air to the surface of the earth, and again from the surface of the earth to the centre thereof, the aether is insensibly finer and finer. Imagine now any body suspended in the air, or lying on the earth, and the aether being by the hypothesis grosser in the pores, which are in the upper parts of the body, than in those which are in its lower parts, and that grosser aether being less apt to be lodged

in those pores than the finer aether below, it will endeavor to get out and give way to the finer aether below, which cannot be, without the bodies descending to make room above for it to go out into.

From this supposed gradual subtilty of the parts of aether some things above might be further illustrated and made more intelligible; but by what has been said, you will easily discern whether in these conjectures there be any degree of probability, which is all I aim at. For my own part, I have so little fancy to things of this nature, that had not your encouragement moved me to it, I should never, I think, have thus far set pen to paper about them. What is amiss, therefore, I hope you will the more easily pardon in

Your most humble
servant and honourer,
ISAAC NEWTON."

2. FROM THE LAST QUERY OF NEWTON'S OPTICKS.

"Now by the help of these principles, all material things seem to have been composed of the hard and solid particles above-mentioned, variously associated in the first creation by the counsel of an intelligent agent. For it became him who created them to set them in order. And if he did so, it's unphilosophical to seek for any other origin of the world, or to pretend that it might arise out of a chaos by the mere laws of nature; though being once formed, it may continue by those laws for many ages. For while comets move in very excentric orbs in all manner of positions, blind fate could never make all the planets move one and the same way in orbs concentric, some considerable irregularities excepted, which may have risen from the mutual actions of comets and planets upon one another, and which will be apt to increase, till this system wants a reformation. Such a wonderful uniformity in the planetary system must be allowed the effect of choice. And

so must the uniformity in the bodies of animals, they having generally a right and a left side shaped alike, and on either side of their bodies two legs behind, and either two arms, or two legs, or two wings before upon their shoulders and between their shoulders a neck running down into a backbone, and a head upon it; and in the head two ears, two eyes, a nose, a mouth, and a tongue, alike situated. Also the first contrivance of those very artificial parts of animals, the eyes, ears, brain, muscles, hearts, lungs, midriff glands, larynx, hands, wings, swimming bladders, natural spectacles, and other organs of sense and motion; and the instinct of brutes and insects, can be the effect of nothing else than the wisdom and skill of a powerful ever-living agent, who being in all places, is more able by his will to move the bodies within his boundless uniform sensorium, and thereby to form and reform the parts of the universe, than we are by our will to move the parts of our own bodies. And yet we are not to consider the world as the body of God, or the several parts thereof, as the parts of God. He is an uniform being, void of organs, members or parts, and they are his creatures subordinate to him, and subservient to his will; and he is no more the soul of them, than the soul of man is the soul of the species of things carried through the organs of sense into the place of its sensation, where it perceives them by means of its immediate presence, without the intervention of any third thing. The organs of sense are not for enabling the soul to perceive the species of things in its sensorium, but only for conveying them thither; and God has no need of such organs, he being everywhere present to the things themselves. And since space is divisible *in infinitum*, and matter is not necessarily in all places, it may also be allowed that God is able to create particles of matter of several sizes and figures, and in several proportions to space, and per-

haps of different densities and forces, and thereby to vary the laws of nature, and make worlds of several sorts in several parts of the universe. At least, I see nothing of contradiction in all this.

"As in mathematics, so in natural philosophy, the investigation of difficult things by the method of analysis, ought ever to precede the method of composition. This analysis consists in making experiments and observations, and in drawing general conclusions from them by induction, and admitting of no objections against the conclusions but such as are taken from experiments, or other certain truths. For hypotheses are not to be regarded in experimental philosophy. And although the arguing from experiments and observations by induction be no demonstration of general conclusions; yet it is the best way of arguing which the nature of things admits of, and may be looked upon as much the stronger, by how much the induction is more general. And if no exception occur from phenomena, the conclusions may be pronounced generally. But if at any time afterwards any exception shall occur from experiments, it may then begin to be pronounced with such exceptions as occur. By this way of analysis we may proceed from compounds to ingredients, and from motions to the forces producing them; and in general, from effects to their causes, and from particular causes to more general ones, till the argument end in the most general. This is the method of analysis; And the synthesis consists in assuming the causes discovered, and established as principles, and by them explaining the phenomena proceeding from them, and proving the explanations.

"In the first two books of these *Opticks*, I proceeded by this analysis to discover and prove the original differences of the rays of light in respect of refrangibility, reflexivity, and colour, and their alternate fits of easy reflection and easy transmission, and the properties of bodies, both opaque and pellucid, on which their reflections and colours depend. And these discoveries being proved, may be assumed in the method of composition for explaining the phenomena arising from them: an instance of which method I gave in the end of the first Book. In this third Book I have only begun the analysis of what remains to be discovered about light and its effects upon the frame of nature, hinting several things about it, and leaving the hints to be examined and improved by the farther experiments and observations of such as are inquisitive. And if natural philosophy in all its parts, by persuing this method, shall at length be perfected, the bounds of moral philosophy will also be enlarged. For so far as we can know by natural philosophy what is the first cause, what power he has over us, and what benefits we receive from him, so far our duty towards him, as well as that towards one another, will appear to us by the light of nature. And no doubt, if the worship of false Gods had not blinded the heathen, their moral philosophy would have gone farther than to the four cardinal virtues; and instead of teaching the transmigration of souls, and to worship the sun and moon, and dead heroes, they would have taught us to worship our true author and benefactor, as their ancestors did under the government of Noah and his sons before they corrupted themselves."

A CLARIFICATION

IN *PSYCHOSOMATIC DIAGNOSIS* by Flanders Dunbar, P. Hoeber, New York, 1943, we find several references to our work

which are misleading and need to be clarified.

The following sentences appear twice

in the book (p. 53f., p. 576): "As Freud, Reich, and some others have pointed out, the musculature represents a sort of characterological armor . . . Muscle tension is a real psychosomatic borderline . . . binding vegetative energy."

This kind of reference to important scientific findings is inadmissible. Imagine the following sentence in a book on aeronautics: "The brothers Wright, Henry Ford and some others have built airplanes"; or the following in a book on physics: "Galileo, Kepler and some others have pointed out that the law of gravitation has a sort of validity." It is customary in scientific writing to distinguish clearly what one or the other worker has contributed to the clarification of a given scientific problem. The concept of the "character armor" is Wilhelm Reich's and has been clearly defined by him (cf. *CHARAKTER-ANALYSE*, 1933, and *THE FUNCTION OF THE ORGASM*, 1942). Freud not only did not accept character-analysis but did not even mention it in his writings. "Some others" can refer to nobody but Reich's co-workers.

On p. 120 we find the following sentence:

Character analysis does not focus on probing to the depths of the unconscious and the instinctual life as in analysis of the libido, but rather on the manner in which the patient's defenses against his conflicts have found expression in his habits of feeling, thought and action, and have warped or colored his personality (Kardiner).

This is a complete distortion of the facts. The concept of character-analysis was defined and its technique developed by Wilhelm Reich. If anybody, in a scientific work, refers to character-analysis, it is his duty to use the term in the sense of its originator, instead of quoting somebody else who gives the term an entirely

erroneous interpretation. From the writings of Reich and his co-workers¹ it is abundantly clear that—in contradistinction to a superficial association and interpretation analysis—character-analysis works precisely with the depths of unconscious instinctual life. More than that, the deep biophysical functions are the very center of character-analytic work. We strongly repudiate any contention to the effect that character-analysis does *not* concentrate on the biophysical depth mechanism of the sexual function. It was precisely because this is where character-analysis works that it opened an avenue of approach to the psychosomatic problem, an avenue which is still barred to anyone not using this method.

In *THE FUNCTION OF THE ORGASM*, 1942, Reich writes:

The difference between my technique and Adler's characterological attempts was that it consisted in *character-analysis through analysis of the sexual behavior*. Adler, however, had said: "Analysis *not* of the libido, *but* of the character." My conception of the character armor has nothing in common with Adler's formulation of individual character traits. Any such comparison of the sex-economic theory of structure with Adler's characterology would betray a fundamental misconception. Character traits such as "inferiority feeling" or "will to power" are only superficial manifestations of the *armoring* process in the *biological* sense, i.e., in the sense of vegetative inhibition of vital functioning.

On p. 94 we find the following footnote:

Wilhelm Reich has developed these principles [of relaxation] in combination with psychoanalysis to a high degree, and created "a new therapeutic technique" which he terms vegetotherapy. Theodore P. Wolfe, has given special attention to this matter.

¹ Cf., e.g., Wolfe, Theodore P.: "Character-Analysis." *This Journal* 1, 1942, 90ff.

Not only is vegetotherapy—which for 10 years has brought revolutionary knowledge into the field of psychosomatic medicine—relegated to a footnote in a book of 741 pages on Psychosomatic Diagnosis. In addition, it is referred to as “a new therapeutic technique,” in quotation marks. These quotation marks can have only one meaning and function: that of giving the reader the impression that vegetotherapy is *not* a new therapeutic technique. Dunbar knows very well not only that vegetotherapy is a new technique but also knows its importance. Yet, the footnote must give the reader the impression that vegetotherapy is some kind of “relaxation therapy in combination with psychoanalysis.” The sentence, “Theodore P. Wolfe, has given special attention to this matter” has an equally deprecatory implication. It refers to the fact that Wolfe, in the course of psychosomatic research done years ago in association with Dunbar, and in his work at the psychiatric clinic, paid special attention to muscular tensions and techniques of relaxation. This fact would be worth mentioning only in conjunction with the more important—and unmentioned—fact that Wolfe found these techniques insufficient and therefore turned to vegetotherapy, which he has been practising for the past five years.

If our work is deliberately left unmentioned, we have nothing to say. If, however, the reading public is given a pur-

posely erroneous impression of it, we are obliged to protest and correct.

The index of Dunbar's book on Psychosomatic Diagnosis does not contain the word “orgasm.” Nor does it mention Wilhelm Reich's *DIE FUNKTION DES ORGASMUS* which appeared in 1927 and in which, for the first time, the core of the psychosomatic problem, the connection between *sexuality, anxiety and the vegetative system*, was presented. This book is well known to the author of *PSYCHOSOMATIC DIAGNOSIS*, as are later sex-economic publications. It does not matter here whether the omission of these works was intentional or not. The motives of an author are irrelevant. What matters is that an author who represents official psychosomatic medicine ignores publications which, during the past 17 years, presented the basic mechanisms of the biopathies, the very diseases which this psychosomatic medicine attempts to understand. This means that the responsibility for the realm of the biopathies rests with the workers of the Orgone Institute, and not with the representatives of official psychosomatic medicine. As incredible as the omission of the orgasm problem may seem to us, it is nothing but an indication of the fact that the psychosomaticists officially decline the responsibility for the central problem of psychosomatic medicine. This, of course, has inexorable consequences.

SOME OBSERVATIONS OF CHILDREN

Many parents who wish to avoid having their children undergo the tyrannies they themselves experienced in childhood find themselves nevertheless baffled and unresourceful in meeting the practical problems of nursery education along freer principles. All of us have grown up under old misconceptions and still carry to a greater or lesser degree the inhibitions and anxieties stemming from childhood re-

straints. All of us have the practical problems of making a healthy life for ourselves and our children in a world which does not, as yet, except in isolated small groups, or on a very superficial level, accept freedom. For this reason it has seemed useful to present some actual observations of everyday problems and how they were handled.

Feeding Problems. Bill was a bottle-fed

baby, but he was fed whenever he was hungry and not by the clock. If he wanted more than a "normal" feeding he had it. If he wanted less no pressure was put on him to take more. He was never waked up to be fed. His pediatrician was a little sceptical, but his mother said, "Sometimes I'm hungry and sometimes I'm not. Why shouldn't he feel the same way?"

Bill enjoyed solid foods early and liked variety. Here, too, his mother was quick to recognize that she, too, got bored with the same diet. When Bill was about fourteen months old he reached for the spoon for the first time. Thereafter he always had a small dish and a small spoon on his high chair for himself. This was not enough, however, and often he wanted the bigger spoon and the bigger dish as well. A great deal of food was slopped around as Bill learned to manage first one spoon and then the other. One day when a neighbor was giving him lunch she tried to be neater and to take control of the situation by requiring Bill to leave the big spoon alone and use only the little one. Bill threw a spoonful of vegetables smack in her face. The neighbor understood the reproach and tried to start over again more easily, but the contact was lost and the meal was a failure. Bill refused to have any more. An hour later he was ready to begin again, and the neighbor was willing to go along with him at his pace. Feeding is a total experience in which the child must function spontaneously and with initiative according to the level of attention and coordination he has mastered.

The disastrous effects of compulsive feeding were observed in Claire, a girl of four who was a patient in a psychiatric hospital. Claire had been the object of oversolicitous attention from a mother and grandmother and when she was brought to the hospital she could not feed herself. She had been on a hunger strike for a week and had many other stubborn traits.

Her mother delivered her at the hospital with the comment, "I beat her every day with the hair brush, but of course I won't allow you to do that." Claire walked into the hospital shouting, "I won't eat, I won't eat." Claire was told she didn't have to eat. The first day, when the other children went to the dining room for meals, Claire sat outside on a bench chanting to herself, "I won't eat." No one paid any attention. The second day when deposited on the bench on the way to breakfast she burst into tears. She was brought into the dining room, but immediately screamed "I won't eat." She was told she didn't have to eat. The next two meals she came to the table and furtively watched the other children. On the third day she suddenly snatched a banana from the plate of the child next to her and ate it in nearly one mouthful. Then she started to eat the cereal with her fingers. It was clear she did not know how to use a spoon. After that there was no more trouble with Claire's eating, but for many weeks she prefaced each meal with the solemn statement "I don't have to eat," and often she could be heard chanting to herself "I don't have to eat."

In moments of fatigue children rebel against the standards of adults and this often shows itself at table. Isabelle was nearly five. She had watched her baby brother have his supper in the nursery, dawdling and playing with his food and spilling a good deal. At the supper table with her parents she behaved as the baby had. Her mother said, "If you'd rather have supper in the nursery we'll take it up there and you can eat the way you like. But if you want to have supper with us you must eat the way Mother and Daddy do." Isabelle chose to stay. She was able to make this choice because her mother had been able to offer it without a tone of reproof or punishment.

Toilet Training. Bill's mother asked the pediatrician when she should start toilet

training Bill and received the sensible reply, "Not until he knows when he's urinating. Watch him and you can tell." In this connection the writer observed the following incident:

The mother was to be away for the afternoon and again the neighbor was caring for Bill. As the mother went out the door she said "If he's still dry when he wakes up from his nap I usually take him to the toilet. If he's very wet, just change him. There's no point having him sit on the toilet when he doesn't need to go."

He was dry when he woke so he was put on his small seat that fits over the big toilet. He urinated, watching the stream, and watching the water when the toilet was flushed. About two hours later, the neighbor was reading and Bill was playing with a ball in the corner. The neighbor, not very experienced with children, had not thought to take him to the toilet again, and Bill did not yet talk enough to be able to ask to go. Suddenly in a gush he urinated through his diaper, making a puddle on the floor. He looked startled but not dismayed. Then he stooped down, and obviously repeating what he had seen his mother do, he started to wipe it up, using his bare hand. The neighbor got a cloth and the two of them wiped it up together. She took him to the bathroom, but at the door he resisted saying cheerfully "All fru," so she changed him and he ran off.

Isabelle's mother had a job and therefore employed a nurse. Her first attempt with a "competent woman with excellent references" was unfortunate. The mother explained that Isabelle was not to be punished for "accidents" and the nurse agreed. But in the park the scorn of other nurses was too much for this woman's professional pride, and when Isabelle wet her panties she was shamed and ridiculed before the other children and their nurses. Isabelle's nurse did not consider this punishment. Out of the experience with this

nurse, however, grew an exaggerated anxiety in the little girl every time her mother started to leave in the morning. After some exploration a new nurse was employed who was a young married woman with natural warmth and the situation cleared up after a short time.

One other situation is worth mentioning since its occurrence fills many parents with dismay. When a baby discovers his feces he very often wants to play with them. He has no more feeling about this than about exploring his mouth, or about watching or touching his urine. If he is very young he may even wish to put some of the excrement in his mouth, for his mouth is still his surest instrument for knowing the world. Bill was about eight months old when he made this discovery. His parents had slept later than he and when they got up to look at him he was painting the walls all around his crib with the soft brown mass and it was all over his face and hair. He was cooing with delight. His mother wiped his face, gave him a kiss and then bathed him and put him in his play-pen. Then she had the walls to wash, but, she commented, "After eight months of diapers, what's a wall." Bill's mother invented some materials for Bill to play with. She made two bowls, one of chocolate pudding and one of raspberry cereal and she and Bill played painting the play-pen. Now Bill is a year older and has finger paints. It might be added, however, that twice more Bill did a wall-painting job. The transition from self to object cannot usually be made in a single step.

Masturbation. Bill was having his bath. Clearly everything about the bath delighted him. First he sailed his red fish all around the tub, then he put its tail in his mouth and sucked it. Then he splashed with his hands. Then he swished his body up and down in the water. Then he played with his penis, letting the fish fall out of his mouth and laughed. Then he

swished up and down some more. He sang a little to himself. He started playing with his sailboat, reaching down with one hand to hold his genital while he pushed the yellow boat with the other till it capsized. At this moment the cook looked in to ask Bill's mother a question. "Mrs. B., you ought to slap his hands when he touches himself that way." Bill's mother looked down at the delighted baby. "Why," she said, "he isn't interfering with anyone."

Bill was eighteen months old when this happened. At a little older age, when a child can talk, has learned to know that the bathroom is the proper place for going to the toilet, he can begin to be conscious about masturbation as a private matter also. This should be handled directly and simply by the mother exactly as bathroom habits are. It doesn't seem sensible to this writer to relegate such privacy to the bathroom since such associations as are formed may take on a negative character later as he encounters the attitudes of other children toward bodily functions of all sorts. If the child has his own room that is the place for his privacy. If not, his mother's room will serve.

Isabelle's mother related the following: When Isabelle was four her mother took her to a long public ceremony where the presence of the child meant a great deal to the participants in the affair. When the day was over, the little girl had behaved beautifully, but was solemn-eyed, strained and tired. Her mother said to her: "It meant a lot to Aunt K. to have you come along today. But I know it wasn't any fun for you. Now the next two days are all yours. We'll get Ruth (a cousin of the same age) and the two of you can do *anything* you want—only you can't climb on the window sills because that's dangerous (in a tall apartment house), and if you want to too too (nursery language in this household for masturbate) better go in Mother's room where you can be by yourself." Isabelle's mother, describing

the two days said "we romped, we cooked, we climbed over the furniture, we built houses, we played hide and seek and we made *noise*." By the second night Isabelle and Ruth were tired and happy and ready to live more quietly.

Masturbation which is affirmed, guided, recognized by both child and parent has none of the compulsive characteristics of neurotic masturbation. Some observations of little boys showed two aspects of neurotic masturbation at an early age.

A mother and a grandmother were walking with two children along the railway platform. Between them walked the baby, about two, holding the hand of each of them. A few steps behind, obviously withdrawn and feeling neglected was the older child, a boy of about six. The mother and grandmother walked too fast however, and the baby fell down. She clearly was not hurt but set up a howl of rage. Mother and grandmother fussed over her and kissed her many times while the howling which was achieving its purpose was maintained. The boy, watching, turned and walked away. With his hand in his trouser pocket he was masturbating, unconsciously comforting himself for the overt discrimination in favor of the younger.

Two little boys, not more than six and seven, one just a little bigger than the other, were playing on the sidewalk. The larger boy was teasing the smaller, offering him a ride on a tricycle and then snatching it away. The little one attempted to hold his own but he wasn't strong enough and couldn't run fast enough. Finally he ran down the street after his tormentor, holding his genital as he ran.

Both of these incidents show children who spontaneously attempted to express their outgoing needs in the face of obstacles that were making them feel constricted. Yet neither understood what he was doing and therefore was not able to really achieve comfort or to find an appro-

priate time and place. It was unconscious and compulsive.

A different kind of situation was observed in a little boy on the bus with his nurse. The boy was about two, fat and unhealthy-looking. The little boy kept holding his genital and the nurse would brush his hand away, laughing and googling at him to distract his attention. This took on the character of a game, the boy laughing up at her and then slyly and quickly grabbing himself, then she brushing his hand away, each trying to outwit the other. Here was suppression with a smile; the child had already learned not to trust the smile and to meet craft with craft.

Sexual information. It now seems almost out of date to point out that sexual information should be given simply and naturally at any age whatever in which questions are presented. Yet many parents are unable to accept this simple principle. They think the child is too young, or they want to be "completely frank with the child" giving him explanations far beyond his comprehension.

Bill plays with Jane who is six months older than he, and is the child in the block who is nearest his age. Bill's mother thinks he needs to get used to other children, and since he's been playing with Jane he has learned to share toys, has begun to talk more. After the following incident with Jane's mother she was very disturbed and thought of perhaps not having him play with Jane any longer.

Jane was spending the day at Bill's house. The two children had had lunch and a nap and were being taken up and got ready to go to the park. Jane was awake first and was dressed first. Then Bill woke, and was taken in to the toilet. Jane followed along. This was clearly the first time she had ever seen a little boy's genitals. She was fascinated, and when Bill was through urinating Jane got a little piece of toilet paper and wiped his

penis. Then she wanted to repeat the performance, but she was a little awkward and rough. Bill's mother said, "I think he's dry now. And that's a very sensitive part of the body. We must always touch it gently." That was the end of the matter for the afternoon. Bill's mother told Jane's mother about it when she came to take Jane home. That night when Jane was having her bath she looked down at herself and said "No Bill." Jane's mother said: "Bill hasn't been very well so he has that swelling now, but after he's better it'll go away."

It might be added that Jane, although only two, has a flirtatious, adult-conscious bearing. Although she seems quite free in her play with Bill there is something artful in her manner with grown-ups.

Bill's mother was in a dilemma. Certainly she did not want to think of ever leaving Bill under the supervision of Jane's mother. On the other hand, could she talk to her directly without upsetting a friendship and the social relations of the children and adults in the block? She decided for the present to make excuses to have Jane and Bill together only when they were outdoors in the playground, and to await a spontaneous opportunity to talk with Jane's mother about some of these questions of children's behavior. Jane's mother commented once that "she was so glad she had a girl. There was something repulsive about little boys."

The mother who wants her child to remain free often feels herself in a dilemma with her friends and their children, which may not be acute in the first two years when the child is still very much homebound, but which increases as the child encounters other adults and the disapproval of his own age group who have been repressively educated. If parents will however speak the truth to their children about their own natures and the objective problems of living together in a society and feel comfortable about what they are say-

ing inside themselves, they will not find the difficulties they anticipate.

A parent, zealous for truth, put her ten-year-old son in a very difficult position in the following way: A friend of the mother's had a child by a man to whom she was never legally married and with whom she lived only a brief time. This mother had never attempted to cover up the situation or to invent any fictions about it, either to her daughter, Nancy, or to her friends. On the whole she had been quite successful in her open attitude. One day Roger, the ten-year-old, heard some talk at the dinner table about Nancy and her mother. He asked where Nancy's father was. His mother, instead of answering the specific question simply by saying the truth, namely, that Nancy's father was now living in another country, replied with what she believed to be a "frank" statement. She said, "Nancy hasn't got any father. She's illegitimate." The first part of this statement was false, the second a legalistic and social concept beyond the boy's comprehension. The fact that he did not comprehend was shown some days later in a discussion at school. The boy maintained that children did not have to have fathers, that he knew a girl who was illegitimate, using that term. The teacher told him he must never say such a disgraceful thing again, making him feel guilty and even more confused by her attitude. Only a neurotically inhibited mother would have created this problem for her son. Yet, like many intellectuals, she imagines herself free because she is willing to say some things that others shy from. She defended herself in this instance by saying, "Nancy's mother hasn't lied to her, so why should I lie about it?" Compulsive truth and compulsive conventionality combined to offer the child a confusing and damaging experience.

The child in association with adults. A child's relation to adults, his behavior

toward them and expectations from them can be firmly established in the first few years of life in the home. It is important that not all the early life of the child is spent in a special nursery world, but that he takes his appropriate place among the members of the family with mutual recognition of one another's rights. Bill, for example, has his own corner in the living room. He plays there for a considerable span of time with his toys without seeking attention from others in the room. When he does want things adults are using—books, ashtrays, newspapers and magazines, his mother sees that he has one of his own of the same article in his corner. So in the kitchen, too, he has his kettle, his spoon, often even his carrot and his potato. Bill was less than a year and a half old when he could clearly discriminate what was his and what was not and accept denial when he wanted the things of other people. This was because he had grown up from the very first under such a regime.

Many parents are at a loss to know how to talk to their children. They either pooh-pooh the child's own coined words as baby talk and insist on the adult words, or they condescend to and infantilize the child with a surfeit of baby talk of their own. The writer is an advocate of nursery language but not baby talk. By nursery language I mean the terms a child coins, particularly about himself, and with which he feels comfortable. Nursery language should be used primarily in direct conversation with the child, seriously, with the recognition that when the occasion offers the child must be helped to replace this with an adult vocabulary without becoming self-conscious or confused. A parent who thinks her child's language "cute" will break the feeling of comfortableness that the child has and make him learn to capitalize on what should be spontaneous, simple and serious.

Nurses. Not enough can be said about

the kind of persons left in charge of a child when the parents are away. In the one-servant household this is often a woman chosen for her ability to cook, or her willingness to do general housework, rather than for her suitability to care for a child. It goes without saying that a woman must be sexually healthy in order to give a child an appropriate environment. She herself must be "on the child's side"; must be comfortable with herself, decent and simple and patient. It is not enough that she be experienced with children, or for that matter that she be married. Her attitude toward human relationships generally as well as toward the problems of child training will give a certain index to suitability. But these attitudes cannot be judged in terms of whether she merely says yes to her employer's wishes. Appro-

priate people are hard to find. Especially the woman who works outside the home has a problem in this area. Isabelle's mother, who could afford only one servant, found a suitable person after trial and error who was, however, not up to standard in many other household responsibilities. Isabelle's mother preferred to do the extra cooking and housework herself, however, in order to have the person who was right for the child.

Some general principles. These brief observations show up a few general principles which might be restated here. First we might say, "Enjoy your child." Then: Spend time with your child. Respect his spontaneous needs. Don't be in a hurry. Try to remember what the world looks like to him at whatever age he is.

FROM THE ORGONE INSTITUTE PRESS

The following books by Wilhelm Reich are now translated into English and will be published as soon as feasible:

CHARAKTER-ANALYSE, 1933.

MASSENPSYCHOLOGIE DES FASCHISMUS. Translated from the manuscript of the 3rd German edition, revised and enlarged.

SEXUALITÄT IM KULTURKAMPF, 1936.

The "Excerpts from A. S. Neill's *THE PROBLEM TEACHER*," published in the *JOURNAL*, have created considerable interest in various quarters and have led to the publication of an American edition of the book. It is published by International

University Press, 227 West 13 Street, New York 11, N. Y. Price, \$2.50.

As in 1943, Nos. 2 and 3 of the *JOURNAL* are issued together, in a double number. This is necessitated by reasons of economy in time and money. The reduced bulk of Volume 3 of the *JOURNAL* may give the impression that its volume has been reduced. This is not the case. In the interest of paper conservation, the *JOURNAL* is now printed on lighter and less bulky paper than before. The number of pages is actually larger than in Volume 2.

ADDRESSES OF THE INSTITUTE

It happens frequently that mail for the different sections of the Institute is sent to the wrong address, which results in a waste of time and effort. We should like to ask the readers to note the following addresses:

Personal communications to Dr. Reich are to be sent to

Dr. Wilhelm Reich
99-06 Stafford Avenue
Forest Hills, New York
Telephone: BOulevard 8-5997

Inquiries about the orgone and cancer research and about orgone accumulators are to be sent to

ORGONE AND CANCER RESEARCH LABORATORIES
99-06 Stafford Avenue
Forest Hills, New York
Telephone: BOulevard 8-5997

Orgone accumulators are to be returned to

ORGONE INSTITUTE LABORATORIES, WORKSHOP

Miss Clista Templeton, Manager
Oquossoc, Maine

Orders and payments for books and journals, and inquiries about publications, are to be sent to

ORGONE INSTITUTE PRESS, INC.
400 East 57 Street
New York 22, N. Y.

Editorial correspondence concerning the JOURNAL is to be sent to

Dr. Theodore P. Wolfe
401 East 56 Street
New York 22, N. Y.

REVIEWS

GUYON, RENÉ: *The Ethics of Sexual Acts*. Garden City, N. Y.: Blue Ribbon Books, 1941.

As the title of the book indicates, the author aims to examine the sexual problem from the ethical point of view. In his preface, however, the author states that this first volume "is essentially a physiological or, to use the current expression, a psycho-physiological study." Specifically, this work intends to set forth the facts "which, when considered in relation to one another, will render possible a truly scientific view of sexuality, freed from sterile traditions; and which, above all, will give us a precise conception of those moral values which we must reject." Our critical attention must therefore be directed to both the ethical and scientific aspects of this study.

In the chapter entitled "The Morality of Sexual Acts," Guyon sets forth the following ethical principles:

1. The convention which regards the sexual organs as shameful is without any foundation in reason, logic or physiology.

...

2. The acts accompanying sexual pleasure find their only and sufficient justification in the pleasure which they bring; sexual pleasure is therefore just as admissible as any other natural satisfaction, and its exercise, in whatsoever form may be preferred, has nothing to do with morality, the virtue or the dignity of either sex.

3. There should therefore be no disgrace, either for the man or the woman, in procuring or in giving sexual pleasure; it is the lawful and natural exercise of a physiological act.

4. Sexual pleasure is always lawful, whether it is obtained with a view to reproduction or as an end in itself, i.e., for the mere purpose of obtaining a specific satisfaction.

5. Everybody has the right to exercise quite freely his own preferences in matters of sex, so long as he is guilty of no violence or deceit to others; the right to sexual satisfaction is just as inalienable as the right to eat.

6. The hygiene of the sexual sense and sexual organs is a matter of science and of personal responsibility, just as is the hygiene of the nutritive function.

With these ethical principles there can be no disagreement. What two adult persons do to obtain sexual pleasure with each other is a matter of personal hygiene only; their actions cannot be judged ethically as either immoral or unlawful. It is another matter, if an adult attempts to impose his sexual practices upon a child or young adolescent.

So much for Guyon's ethical concepts. Let us look, now, at the scientific view of sexuality which Guyon presents as a corollary to his ethical principles. We quote from page 344:

There are no sexual aberrations. There are only differences of procedure, cunningly combined according to individual variations of taste, together with preferences for particular persons or classes of persons: and that is all.

From this he sets up the following principles:

1. It is wrong to suppose that ordinary coitus is the only normal mode of sexual satisfaction. . . .

2. Every mechanical means of producing sexual pleasure is normal and legitimate. . . .

3. The personal characteristics of the sexual partner have nothing to do with the physiological manifestations of sexual pleasure itself.

Is there no biological difference, then, between coitus with a natural love object

and onanism, homosexuality, exhibitionism, incest and fetichism? Because these ideas of Guyon's are quite widespread among so-called liberal thinkers in sexuality, it becomes incumbent upon us to subject them to the scientific principles of sex-economy.

The author advances several arguments to support this thesis. First, he equates adult sexuality with infantile sexuality. On page 74, we find this remark: "Indeed, we may say of coitus that it only corresponds to a brief moment in the whole complicated development of the pleasures of love. The various forms of satisfaction that precede it, though doubtless less intense, have such a fascination of their own, that connoisseurs of sexual pleasure willingly prolong them. But these satisfactions, though among adults they may eventually lead to copulation, are of exactly the same nature of those of the pre-adolescent." Proceeding from Freud's demonstration of the polymorphous nature of infantile sexuality, the author argues that since this condition is natural for the child who is further removed from conventional sexual restrictions than the adult, it is the natural condition for all persons.

This argument is untenable. Behavior which is natural for the child is certainly not natural for the adult. The admission that perversions are regressions to the infantile level proves the etiology of the disturbance. The fact that such actions are also components of normal coitus does not justify the claim that they represent normal sexual aims in themselves. Freud's definition of the perversion is still true: "It is morbid if the perversion does not appear beside the normal (sexual aim and sexual object), where favorable circumstances promote it and unfavorable impede the normal, or if it has under all circumstances repressed and supplanted the normal."

Two other remarks of Guyon in the

above quotation require comment. What is meant by the "complicated development of the pleasures of love"? If there is to be any pleasure in love, it would result only because of a lack of complications. I have always objected to the use of the word "connoisseur" with reference to love or sexual enjoyment. The so-called connoisseur frequently turns out to be only a libertine. We shall have more to say about this later.

The second argument Guyon advances is an analysis of the reason for the suppression of sexuality. In this presentation, he commits a common methodological error. He assumes that sexual suppression resulted from early primitive taboos. To quote, from page 157:

Thus, as a ransom from terror, the taboos of deprivation settled down upon the human race. . . . Since, of the various sources of pleasure, the sexual one is the most highly prized of all, it is easy to foresee that its deprivation will play a part in those renunciations which must be made to the gods as a price of their protection; and that it will become the object of a particularly strong taboo of its own. This indeed is what actually happened. . . .

Did it really happen that way? The fact that two events, taboo and active sexual suppression, are coincident in time does not justify the assumption that the former gave rise to the latter. As a matter of fact, the earliest taboo on sexual relations, the law of exogamy, simply limited the class of persons with whom sexual relations could be entered into. We quote from Freud's *TOTEM AND TABOO*: "The members of the same totem are not allowed to enter into sexual relations with each other; that is, they cannot marry each other." Further, Wilhelm Reich has shown in his book, *DER EINBRUCH DER SEXUALMORAL*, that it was the suppression of sexuality and the growth of private property interests which gave rise to the taboos.

To be unaware of the connection between sexual suppression and private economic interests in society is to fail in any attempt to eliminate the former. The relation between the two in primitive society is revealed in Malinowski's work, *THE SEXUAL LIFE OF SAVAGES*. Unfortunately, the origin of sexual suppression is not so simple as Guyon makes it out.

We come now to the physiological part of Guyon's book. The third argument to support the view of sexuality presented above is "The Mechanistic Theory of Sexuality." Quite correctly, the author distinguishes between reproduction and sexuality. But the manner in which this distinction is made is subject to critical review. In the chapter on the physiology of sexuality, we find the following:

The parallelism with the other senses is so exact that it is impossible to avoid the conclusion that in reality there exist two systems, which are only too often confused with one another: the function of reproduction, and the sexual sense. . . .

In view of the importance of correct terminology in this field, it will be better to express ourselves more exactly and scientifically, and to say that animals, and especially mammals, possess this specific sixth sense, which is a sense of neural pleasure. . . .

There are certain preferences, not always easy to explain, which are important here, though they are often not more inexplicable than the preferences to be met with in some other sensations, such as taste. . . .

When a mechanical cause is at work, it operates without any reference to the nature or quality of the mechanism; hanged men have orgasms and ejaculations, as the result of a condition which is destructive to life. This indifference of the sense to the quality of the mechanism has, as we shall see, a great importance for the proper understanding of the so-called sexual aberrations, and we shall have no difficulty in showing that the role of the stimulus, whatever it may be, consists, in

the last resort, of certain movements, i.e., of a self-sufficient mechanical formula.

We have quoted extensively from this chapter because if the statements quoted above are biologically correct, the conclusions which Guyon draws follow inevitably.

Is there any basis for the comparison between sexuality and the recognized senses? Histologists can point to specialized cells which serve as receptors of various stimuli. Thus there are taste buds for the sense of taste, retinal cells for vision, tactile nerve cells for touch; but no one has discovered a specific receptor for sexual stimuli. Further, it is difficult to follow Guyon's distinction between sense and function. In biology, one does not speak of a nutritive function. The alimentary tract serves one function, the liver another; every special organ serves a special function.

There is good reason for the suspicion that the comparison between sexuality and the senses is made to justify the inexplicable preferences which are met with in the pursuit of pleasure. But even here, I cannot agree with Guyon. Psychoanalysis has shown the origin of the sexual aberrations (*see* Freud's "Three Contributions to the Theory of Sexuality"). So too in matters of taste, these preferences can be shown to be due to early education and environment. My dislike for cereal stems from a childhood feeding experience.

Now, what of the claim that sexual pleasure is merely the result of a mechanical stimulation and that the pleasure is indifferent to the nature or the quality of the mechanism? Before we answer this question, we must know exactly what is sexual pleasure. Guyon says, on page 112, "There is a *specific pleasure* [*italics the author's*], very vivid, and at its height very intense, which comes from the physiological exercise of these organs. . . ." He re-

fers here, obviously, to the orgasm; for we find on page 96 the following remark: "The congestion which manifests itself during orgasm and finds expression in its specific pleasure . . ." But nowhere do we find a description of the orgasm; instead there are remarks which indicate that the author is not too familiar with the exact nature of the sexual pleasure of which he speaks. For example, he states on page 107: "Orgasm, which is of course intimately connected, both actively and passively, with the secretions, may also be brought about by reading or by looking at pictures." The stimulation and excitation which some persons may experience by reading or by looking at pictures is far removed from the very vivid and very intense pleasure referred to above. In a footnote on page 84 the author states that "if one presents a monkey with some favourite morsel, he often experiences orgasm on taking it or eating it." The clue to Guyon's misunderstanding is to be found in an earlier quotation: "Hanged men have orgasms and ejaculations as the result of a condition which is destructive to life." The report that hanged men have ejaculations has frequently been substantiated, but they experience no pleasure in the reaction; and a deep satisfying pleasure is the core of the orgasm.

In sexological literature, the orgasm is, too frequently, confused with the ejaculation. That is apparently Guyon's error. They are two entirely different things. We all know that in premature ejaculation, for example, there is emission without pleasurable sensations and often with feelings of disappointment and disgust. A true understanding and description of the orgasm is found nowhere but in *SEX-ECONOMY*. It is fully set forth in *THE FUNCTION OF THE ORGASM* by Wilhelm Reich. The following statements taken from pages 79 to 85 of Reich's book indicate the essential nature of the orgasm.

Erective and ejaculative potency are nothing but indispensable prerequisites for orgasmic potency. Orgasmic potency is the capacity for surrender to the flow of biological energy without any inhibition, the capacity for complete discharge of all dammed-up sexual excitation through involuntary pleasurable contractions of the body.

The intensity of pleasure in the orgasm depends on the amount of sexual tension concentrated in the genital; the pleasure is all the more intense the greater in amount and the steeper the "drop" in the excitation.

The orgasmic excitation takes hold of the whole body and results in lively contractions of the whole body musculature. . . . What we call the release of tension . . . is predominantly the result of a flowing back of the excitation from the genital to the body.

The complete flowing back of the excitation toward the whole body is what constitutes gratification.

Far from being an automatic response to a purely mechanical stimulation of an erogenous zone, sexual intercourse is a dynamic function which mobilizes all the available biological energy of the body. It is a fact, which the clinical investigations of sex-economy have long revealed, that only the full surrender to love in the sexual act, that is, complete identification with one's partner, can result in the orgasm reflex, the involuntary pleasurable contractions of the body with the concomitant sensation of intense gratification.

If Guyon is unaware of the nature of this phenomenon, he is only one of a very great number of individuals of whom this is, unfortunately, true. Prior to 1923, when Reich discovered the orgasm reflex, sexology and psychology knew only of erective and ejaculatory potency. The reason for Guyon's error is, therefore, not difficult to perceive.

There is, however, another side to the picture. For most persons the sexual act is

a mechanical operation. The author has described a situation which really exists, only it is not a scientific view of sexuality. The mass neurosis which afflicts humanity is rightly attributed by Guyon to the suppression of sexuality, but again, the solution to the problem is not a mechanical sexuality with its resulting libertinism. Such a condition would create the very chaos which our present conventions aim to avoid. On the other hand, sex-economy is based upon a natural love life and the gratification of a healthy sexuality; that is, one in which the sexual act is the expression of a natural love impulse.

Let us consider some of the sexual acts for whose legitimacy Guyon so ardently argues. The author speaks of masturbation on page 304:

Onanism is a very widely current method of obtaining sexual pleasure, for the term includes all mechanical means of procuring this pleasure otherwise than by coitus in the strict sense. . . . We may note too that, at bottom, coitus itself is a form of satisfaction which makes mechanical use for its own ends of the genital organs of another, whereas masturbation is a form of satisfaction which makes mechanical use of any other object. Mechanically there is no difference between the two methods: and sexually the pleasure may be the same in the two cases.

Of course, where coitus is a mechanical act, there is no difference between it and masturbation. There is a very great difference in the sexual pleasure when coitus results in the orgasm. The fact that masturbation is widespread among adults merely proves how common is the disturbance of orgasmic potency. On the other hand, masturbation is not necessarily an aberration.

In childhood, masturbation serves a natural function of providing a means of satisfying the sexual need. In adolescence, it serves to bridge the gap to heterosexual

intercourse. If unduly prolonged, however, it proves disappointing. For the healthy adult, it can never take the place of coitus because it does not offer the deep satisfaction of the orgasm. Recourse to masturbation under circumstances where a love partner of the opposite sex is unavailable is natural, otherwise the practice indicates a disturbance.

Homosexuality, too, is a fairly common practice, but this fact in no way supports the contention that this mode of satisfaction is on a par biologically with heterosexual intercourse. Guyon frequently relies upon statements of individuals that they derive as much pleasure from this relationship as they would from a heterosexual one to equate the two in terms of pleasure. Such subjective proofs are unreliable scientifically. One could as easily prove, by quoting a frigid person, that the sexual act is without pleasure entirely.

Is the tendency to homosexuality physiologically determined? Is inversion congenital? One may find instances of glandular disturbance among homosexuals, but this may be a result of the practice and not its cause. I have heard of no case of congenital inversion. One does find many instances, on the other hand, of this practice among individuals who have been segregated from the opposite sex for extended periods of time. Where the opportunity for heterosexual relations exist this practice is clearly an aberration. It is when we consider the moral aspects of homosexuality, that we must agree with Guyon that "those who do not happen to share it have no business to denounce it or to interfere with it."

This confusion between moral principles and scientific truths pervades the whole of this book. The moral justification of a sexual act in no way renders that act physiologically healthy and harmless. It is the same here as with the other physiological functions. If a person should choose to live on a liquid diet only, no

one would have the moral right to stop him, but it would be another matter entirely to regard his preference as a health diet.

The physiological error which invalidates the scientific principles of this book is the postulation of a mechanistic theory of sexuality. That simply does not accord with the biological facts. The author also commits a psychological error in equating adult sexuality with its infantile counterpart. Speaking of coprophilia, he says: "It is easy to see therefore that coprophilic satisfaction is at any rate not a new discovery of later life, but rather a return to an infantile form of attraction; and this shows it to be something much more natural than might at first have been supposed." If an adult suffers from enuresis, would this be considered more natural too?

The book reveals a methodological error which is all too common in some forms of sexological thinking. Does the fact that other cultures legitimize various sexual acts transform them into healthy manifestations of the sexual impulse? Consider the following quotations:

The law of the Koran, very well informed, like all Oriental documents, on the sexual psychology of children, authorized the marriage of girls at nine and of boys at twelve.

Faithful observers as they were of the logical principles that we ourselves have adopted, neither the Greeks, the Romans, nor the Orientals ever regarded Sodomy or Lesbianism as other than perfectly normal and permissible varieties of pleasure.

In Japan, which seems to be the only existing nation of the world which shows a little common sense in sexual matters, nudity is not shocking, as it is in the West.

The Chinese and Japanese, for instance, are both kind and courteous in their dealings with prostitutes.

What kind of sexual health is shown by countries which favor prostitution and encourage the sale of daughters by their fathers? Japan with its ancestor worship and sadism is a poor example of common sense in sexual matters. Nor can we refer to the ancient Greeks and Romans who, despite their intellectual achievements, tolerated slavery. And certainly, the marriage of girls at nine years of age does not reveal an understanding of the sexual psychology of children. The book abounds with many other misconceptions which, unfortunately, we have not the time here to examine.

It is particularly important at this time, however, to distinguish between natural love and libertinism. Too frequently, it is assumed by biopathic individuals that they are synonymous and that sex-economy, which is against sexual suppression, is also against morality. If sex-economy is against a false, compulsive, morality which denies to people the possibility of real happiness and satisfaction in love and work, it is even more against an immorality which permits the living out of sexual desires motivated by secondary drives. A most timely warning is contained on page 197 of Volume 2 of the *International Journal of Sex-economy and Orgone-Research*.

A. LOWEN.

PHILLIPSON, HERBERT: *Education—A Search for New Principles*. London: George Routledge & Sons, 1942.

This book is made outstanding by the clarity with which education is approached from the sociological standpoint. Its main weakness lies in the naiveté with which the author treats psychology as a more or less negligible adjunct in education. He says quite correctly that "there is not any factor in environment, or in the nature of man, which can be isolated and examined by itself. Man biological and man psychological cannot be separated." If the task of education is to be more than that

of keeping the secondary, antisocial "nature" of man in check, then, indeed, the point of departure of any education must be "the interrelationship between man and his environment, wherein no factors or group of factors remain constant." A society based on free competition leads inevitably to egoism; the wage and profit system leads to the alienation from work. In this connection the author correctly criticizes the onesidedness of mere school reforms. In this way, he points out, the conflict between "moral training" and "social practice" is never solved, and the adjustment to reality ends in hypocrisy and neurosis. "For this is a society which attempts to train its children to enjoy all the possibilities that life now offers, yet safeguards the right to full enjoyment for a small minority of the population . . . in short it is a civilization bold enough and sufficiently hypocritical to persuade itself that its children can be taught to believe what their elders do not practice." The author points out that we should not again be content with a "patched-up system of education" which would mean condoning a "patched-up social structure." Rather, "we must build a new social system which will foster attitudes that bind men together, not tear them apart. The practical human relationships must not be dependent upon an economic system which breeds jealousy, discontent, hate and fear. They must be a part of an economic system which demands common effort, and which gains its motive power and irresistible strength for a common purpose. Under such an economic system, the basis of which has been defined, loyalty, self-sacrifice, confidence and comradeship develop a new quality."

With this "social tendency" of the author one could fully agree. But, in writing about the search for new principles in education, such sociological considerations can be no more than general prerequisites; one would like to hear more about the role

of education in paving the way for such a new economic structure. Only few people have any realization of what a new kind of sexual education could achieve here, and, unfortunately, our author does not belong to them. There can be no doubt that if there are any "new principles" in this field they are to be looked for in sexual education. As things are today, however, one has to look not so much for the principles as for the educators who are willing to take the risk of applying them. What the author has to say on the subject in his chapter on *The Nature of the Individual* is disappointing. His discussion of Freud and Malinowski is so uncritical that one doubts the author's first-hand acquaintance with their writings. He does not explain what he means in stating "that Freud's nature of the unconscious, his id, his ego and his super-ego are more or less local phenomena, dependent for their existence upon the peculiar environment of our times." Nor does the following show a critical evaluation of Freud's findings: "Our new society will have nothing to do with the attitudes of jealousy, hate and aggression which, Freud implies, help to make war inevitable and our children, bless their hearts, while enjoying all the affection of parent and society, will look upon Freud as a nasty ogre who said, 'The function of Education is to inhibit, forbid and repress'." This helplessness and ignorance is compensated by such beautiful and complacent sentences as the following: "The function of Education is not to inhibit, forbid and suppress. The function of Education shall be to guide and encourage, and the example of teacher and society as a whole, together with the active participation of the school in social life, shall lead our children from earliest years into a likeness and sympathy with the beauty of reason." This quotation from Plato's *REPUBLIC* hardly fits into the context of the book. Even where the

author correctly criticizes Freud's socio-ethnological theories he shows that he has no concrete concept of Freud's theories. Since, as far as I know, Malinowski was the first to formulate this ethnological criticism, it is all the more surprising to find the author say the following: "Malinowski, the anthropologist, falls into the same error [as Freud] and poor, inoffensive Trobrianders are endowed with all the blessings and social advantages of an Oedipus complex, the attendant repressions being carefully modified to fit in with the local social organization and marriage laws."

Other chapters of the book, such as the one on Philosophy and Fascism, and the discussions of practical pedagogical problems, however, are better organized and show a young and capable teacher at work. There is much critical material on the problem of "discipline" but the author, like others, leaves us in the dark concerning the ambiguity of "voluntary discipline." One could wish that the author would become acquainted with some sex-economic literature.

HARRY OBERMAYER.

LEVIN, DEANA: *Children in Soviet Russia*. London: Faber & Faber, 1942.

This book belongs to the category of the "Friends-of-Russia literature." The important thing about this category is not the fact that propaganda is being made and that only the good sides (in this case, of socialist school work) are emphasized, but the fact that difficulties of all kinds are left out of consideration. Such smooth pieces of reportage make it difficult for one to form an opinion. They seem to indicate that everything is almost ideal in Soviet Russian education.

In spite of all objective progress, the reading of this book leaves one with an uncomfortable feeling. It shows that even young pupils have a much too "objective" orientation toward life. The reader will

often feel the way children from other countries did who visited the author's school. These children often felt that the eagerness to learn on the part of the Russian schoolchildren was mainly an attempt to please, and that they often were "telling tales." One wonders how the structure-formation of nine-year-olds is influenced by "socialistic contests," the semi-military character of the schools and the "pioneer movement." Under such conditions children no longer go for a walk in the woods but march in formation. One gets the creeps at the description of an eleven-year-old who, because of some minor misbehavior, stands before a committee hearing himself accused. How will he handle his guilt feelings when he is 30?

The deep-reaching changes in Sovietistic education as they have taken place during the past years are not discussed in the book. If co-education was so bad that it had to be abolished in 1943 one would expect that it showed its disadvantages also in the years between 1938 and 1942, the period in which the book took shape. Yet the author, although she had the rank of school inspector, has nothing to say on the subject. It seems that, in the country of the revolution, education has become a concern of the administration. To point out the new economic conditions for education is not enough. One would rightly expect something about the theoretical basis of this new kind of education. In the appendix to the book, we read the usual stuff by uninformed authors about "Puberty":

Usually people are considered mature at the age of 20-22 or even later. . . . At that time the organism can be considered mature enough to fulfill the function of propagation. Propagation is one of the most basic functions of all living beings, including man. Sexual life is the manifestation of the instinct which contributes to the continuation of the species. But the behaviour of man is directed not by in-

instincts, but by his consciousness which is determined by the social environment. We have to approach problems of sexual life consciously. We must remember that these problems are of the greatest importance for society. Soviet public opinion is fully interested in the correct solving of these problems. . . . An early beginning of sexual life is unhealthy from a physiological point of view. It wears out the organism prematurely. From a social point of view early sexual life is also harmful. It cannot bring a healthy posteriority, and makes people weak-willed and strangers to the spirit of collectivism. (Extracts from *ANATOMY AND PHYSIOLOGY OF MAN*, Moscow, 1934.)

The sex-inimical tendency here is obvious, expressed in pseudoscientific statements and moral valuations, the same as one has heard for a long time from the most reactionary sexologists. Every reader of this book should also read Reich's *SEXUALITÄT IM KULTURKAMPF* which demonstrates the irrational background of this kind of pseudoscience.

HARRY OBERMAYER.

PSYCHOANALYSIS TODAY. Edited by Sandor Lorand. New York: International University Press, 1944.

This book is heralded on the jacket as "The Modern Approach to Human Problems." A collection of essays by well-known authors in the psychoanalytic field, it is essentially descriptive and is arranged in six parts: 1. Medicine and Psychosomatics; 2. Education and Social Work; 3. Neuroses; 4. Psychoses; 5. Problems of Therapy; 6. Applied Psychoanalysis.

A reader approaching this volume will want to know whether there is a consistent body of theory which underlies this modern approach to human problems; what the implications of this theory are for therapy, prevention, and insight into related fields of knowledge. Secondly, it may be of interest to the reader to ob-

serve the current status of the profession of psychoanalysis as revealed in this book.

The status of psychoanalysis as a movement is more immediately apparent than its theoretical base.

After half a century psychoanalysis is still a young science, but it has invaded every branch of modern life and thought; and today is one of the most powerful influences affecting our social structure.

This statement from the editor's introduction is supported by the impression the entire volume gives, a correct one, that psychoanalysis has gained recognition and status as a body of knowledge and as a profession. In the light of the struggles for acceptance which marked the early years of Freud's work there may be satisfaction on the part of some that these days are over, but recognition as a "respectable" discipline has not been without cost, as an examination of the theoretical base and its implications will show; a cost of which the contributors often seem vaguely and uneasily aware. It is appropriate to ask, 1) In what way has psychoanalysis invaded every branch of modern life and thought? and 2), What is the nature of this powerful influence on the social structure? This review will attempt to answer these questions.

In looking for a common core of theory which dominates psychoanalytic thought and practice as represented in this volume, one finds a schema essentially unchanged from the later writings of Freud. Two major points stand out which are subject to challenge. The first is the uncritical acceptance of the current conditions of society with the patriarchal family as the immutable norm, "the reality principle" to which individual behavior must be adapted. Oberndorf expresses this in his article on "The Child-Parent Relationship":

The father role, usually recognized in the family as the power behind the

mother, is more difficult to replace in the artificial nursery substitute for the home. Freud and Burlingham point out that it is the father's function "to impersonate for the growing infant the restrictive demands inherent in the code of every civilized society."

A class structure as well as a paternalistic society is equally taken for granted, and by implication valued, by Oberndorf and others here represented:

If the child had a choice, he probably would prefer a "good" parent with some weaknesses which tended to make his own shortcomings less glaring by comparison, rather than a "perfect" one so far removed as to seem unrelated to him. Particularly for *this reason* children are apt to seek the kitchen or servants' quarters in leisure moments, and boys like to pass time with the farm-hand or the chauffeur where a critique of their faults by adults is less severe and the *general level of conduct lower* (italics the reviewer's).

The second point in the theory here represented which invites criticism is the postulate of a life-negating death instinct, co-existent with and of the same nature as the life instinct. Melanie Klein, in the "Early Development of Conscience in the Child," writes:

At the outset of the life of the human organism, the instinct of aggression, or death instinct, is being opposed and bound down by the libido, or life instinct, the eros. A fusion of the two instincts ensues and gives rise to sadism.

The essays in the volume bear out the consequences of these theoretic positions for both theory and practice. In theory the effect has been to by-pass the problem of sexuality, letting it rest with the limited recognition of infantile sexuality, and failing to question further the nature of sexuality itself, or to distinguish between its primary nature and its reactive secondary manifestations in the face of so-

cial suppression. The concepts "pleasure" and "reality" are limited to a subjective ideational approach.

"Reality" and "pleasure" are not necessarily in conflict with one another once the morally defended vested interests of contemporary life are challenged. The reality principle then is seen as practical and decent arrangements for people living and working together. Infants whose rights have been respected will quickly understand the rights of others as they are given opportunity to play with children of their own age group, or to mix with adults in a spontaneous atmosphere devoid of overstimulation and irrational demands on the part of adults. They will form their natural play groups, which in functioning adult life will be natural work groups. "Pleasure," on the other hand, need not be seen as something surrendered for reality, or postponed, or sublimated. Pleasure, if understood in terms of biological functioning, consists of the expansion of the organism, of which the prototype is the expansiveness of sexual functioning, with its climaxing discharge of biological energy; and in its accruing phases expressing itself as normal aggression, going-toward persons and objects; in its ebb, the comfortable withdrawal into self for the accumulation of new reserve. In other words, pleasure equals living functioning of the total organism in all phases, spontaneously, according to self-regulatory needs. Then the only framework society needs to supply is that offering opportunities for privacy, and for working and playing with others.

Two characteristic approaches to sexuality in the present volume should be pointed out, since they reveal the limitations of the contemporary psychoanalytic point of view. Jelliffe writes:

The chief goal, purpose, pattern or wish of conduct . . . or behavior, is the continuance of life. In the lower forms of

life—bacteria and certain protozoa—and in certain higher forms, as in many plants, the action pattern is carried on by a *non-sexual process* (italics the reviewer's).

To anyone who has observed the orgasm reflex in protozoa, a concept of sexuality which is confined to mating for propagation of differentiated sexes no longer has any meaning except in the history of ideas.

Brill, contributing an article on "Sexuality and its Role in the Neuroses," starts off by calling attention to the fundamental bisexuality of the human species, with citations from Greek mythology and descriptions from Krafft-Ebing. This searching for the essential similarity of sexual nature in both men and women can only find a satisfactory solution in Reich's orgasm theory in which it is recognized that in their basic sexual functioning, namely, the orgasmic discharge of biological energy, the male and female of the human species are exactly alike.

Having by-passed any further exploration of sexuality, which one might interpret as their own surrender to suppressive forces of modern society, the theoretical minds among the psychoanalysts have turned to either an elaboration of methodology in the exploration of specific problems, or to the development of the "ego-psychology." Franz Alexander writes in "Development of the Ego-Psychology":

From 1921 on we can speak of the evolution of a new analytic ego-psychology. A deeper investigation of the fundamental processes of repression was the starting point of this new development. The central problem became: which psychic factors are responsible for repression and how does this process take place in detail? It soon became evident that fear is the motive power behind all repression. Characteristic of this fear, however, is the fact that it is by no means a rational or entirely conscious fear of external and actual danger, but an inner fear which ap-

pears in consciousness as a guilty conscience. This phenomenon is most satisfactorily described by saying that one part of the personality exhibits fear of another part, which in ordinary language is called conscience, and that repression serves to avert this fear reaction.

An examination of the mechanisms of repression, of the way in which outside prohibitions become internalized, could hardly be called a true theoretic contribution unless it is related to its dynamic place in the process of human functioning. Thus, understanding of repression and of internalization may serve either to further or to hinder human functioning, and this relationship needs to be shown. An individual might either use his insight into the ways in which his self-prohibitions have developed to free himself from the burden of their compulsive moral character and view limitations simply on a practical and rational basis, recognizing that conditions can, even if slowly, be changed; or his insight might contribute to his resigned acceptance of the necessity of repression. From the point of view of the person accepting and valuing the current social structure and fearing the "instinctual" destructive drives in man, resignation is the only choice, as freedom seems too dangerous. Alexander makes his point of view quite clear when he states:

If an internal code of law such as the super-ego or, to use the more popular expression, the conscience, were not present, social order could only be secured by assigning to every citizen a policeman to make him conform with accepted social behavior.

Let us see how the theoretical points which we have criticized affect education, treatment, prevention, and the relationship to other fields of knowledge. Brill, proceeding from the theory of destructive aggression, claims that:

Through continuous training the little boy is made to feel with his fellow beings: he is *forced* (italics the reviewer's) to identify himself with his neighbor's suffering. I recall a little boy who took great pleasure in throwing out of his crib a toy dog and then screaming continuously until it was returned to him. This toy dog could be made to bark through hand pressure, of which the little fellow was as yet incapable, but when he threw it out of his crib the impact of the fall made it bark. When he suddenly discovered this, he repeated the process over and over again to the annoyance of his parents, who were forced to pick it up for him. When he grew older and began to walk, he would do the same thing to his mother's pet Pomeranian. His greatest pleasure was to throw the dog off his chair so as to make it yelp, and despite repeated admonitions, he repeated it whenever possible. This mischievous action gave him great pleasure because it made him conscious of his power. His mother loved her pet. Consequently, she often chided him for maltreating it. She even strove to instill in her little boy a love for dogs; she would often say, "Pet the doggie, nice little doggie," all of which was of no avail. One day when he again abused the dog the mother lost her patience and knocked him down, saying, "What you do to the dog, I will do to you." The little fellow cried his heart out, but the mother tells me that he never abused her pet again; in fact, he now loves the dog, who is his constant companion. By her act of violence the mother actually forced the child to "feel with" or to empathize himself into the dog, and thus erected a dam against his primitive cruelty.

Any healthy person dealing with children would recognize at once in this case that a mother who would knock down her child to protect her dog was neurotically incapable of real affection for her child and had displaced it to her pet. In the opinion of this writer, the child had already sensed this when he threw down the toy dog from his crib. Even if this

interpretation were not correct the entire situation could have been handled appropriately earlier. The attachment to the dog, which was thus forced upon the child, can only be an early beginning of a cowed, submissive, masochistic attitude of alliance with others, neurotically dishonest and with strong hostile feelings toward objects underlying it.

Melanie Klein, in the article already cited, points out the dilemma of psychoanalytic treatment in dealing with the character formation imposed by contemporary education:

As far as actual experience goes, we know that in analyzing the pre-genital libidinal fixations we can only succeed in converting a certain amount of the libidinal quantities involved into genital libido, even in favorable circumstances, and that the remainder, and no unimportant remainder, continues to be operative as pre-genital libido and sadism; although, since the genital level has now more firmly established its supremacy, it can be better dealt with by the ego, either by receiving satisfaction, *or by being kept down, or by undergoing modification or sublimation* (italics the reviewer's).

This quotation expresses the point of view of much contemporary psychoanalytic treatment. Without a concept of genital health, or an understanding of the effect of sexual stasis and orgasmic impotence in maintaining neurotic illness and its inevitable concomitant of destructiveness, satisfaction or "being kept down" or "undergoing modification" or "sublimation" are viewed as equal choices for expression at the genital level. Analysis sees the patient's getting well, and his becoming resigned to feeling guiltlessly comfortable with his neurosis, as equal goals of therapy.

The approach to prevention is also conspicuously colored by the acceptance of the institutions of modern life. Only one article in the book can definitely be classed

as related to this question, that by Ames on "Prevention of Mental Disease in Childhood." This is, in the reviewer's opinion, the soundest article in the volume. He writes a simple and sensible paper on child training which, though incomplete and far from radical, upholds the ideal of "naturalness and decency" in all physiological processes, and stresses the importance of having persons with this "naturalness and decency" the only ones to be put in charge of children. There is nothing here about "higher" and "lower" standards of conduct. Two other articles which may be considered on the lines of prevention are Kenworthy's on "Psychoanalytical Social Work," and Eisenbud's on "Mental Hygiene." Descriptive in character, they nevertheless call attention to many types of adjustments which can be effected by individuals, social service agencies, and the public through a psychiatric orientation to human behavior. Insofar as this orientation is correct, social workers, and individuals and groups, can do much to alleviate pressures and partially salvage individuals who fall on to the community for care. This is at best patchwork, and neither social work nor public education in mental hygiene concepts can achieve effective changes as long as the interpretation of the nature of human beings and the role of society is accepted in the terms of contemporary psychoanalytic theory; and as long as social control through the professions as well as other economic vested interests is in the hands of the fearful and the resigned.

More characteristic of the helplessness before the problem of prevention are three attitudes:

Broadwin in the article on "Juvenile Delinquency" is clear in stating that "the problem of juvenile delinquency is to be laid at the door of society," but his only recommendations for prevention lie in psychoanalytic treatment, improved correc-

tive schools, and a vague reiteration that sociological and economic factors are in the end of paramount importance.

Schilder, writing on "Problems of Crime," is in an even worse dilemma. Convinced that "the wild, destructive impulses" need to be held down through fear by an externally established order, he can only make a plea for greater individual tolerance for criminal behavior in the light of our understanding of the dynamics of such behavior.

Melanie Klein comes to the logical conclusion of the point of view underlying the whole volume, namely, that "individual psychotherapy alone can help the individual to solve the conflicts that *are in his nature*" (italics the reviewer's), and she concludes with a plea that "child analysis become a part of every child's education."

How, then, has psychoanalysis influenced other branches of modern life and thought? The editor uses the term "invaded" and it is a correct one. Hartmann, in "Psychoanalysis and Sociology," writes:

Human conduct is oriented to its environment, and the psychoanalytical approach includes the structure of reality in its description. This is especially clear in Freud's last version of his theory of anxiety which relates the internal danger to the external one, and in Anna Freud's description of types of defense which the child develops against the discomforts and dangers which threaten him from the outside world. . . .

We are, therefore, primarily concerned with the question: In what manner and to what degree does a given social structure bring to the surface, provoke or reinforce certain instinctual tendencies or certain sublimations, for instance? On the other hand, the way in which different social structures facilitate the solution of certain psychic conflicts by a participation—by action or in phantasy—with the

given social realities, merits special investigation.

The special investigation to which Hartmann refers is being carried on by some psychoanalysts. Thus there have recently been psychoanalytic interpretations for the U. S. Government of such things as "Japanese" character, or of "Balinese" character. This sort of "typological" thinking is most unfortunate, and its effect in practical strategy and in the public mind seems but a repetition of the propaganda devices of Nazi Germany with regard to other peoples. Any correlation between a theory of individual behavior and of group life must recognize the converse side of the problem, namely, the dynamics of change within a given social frame and the implicit possibilities and necessities for social reorganization. Thus an industrial society in Japan or Europe or the United States brings conditions of life and possibilities of life which cannot be equated with concepts of character types derived from historical studies of social structures viewed as static "reality." Any approach to other fields of knowledge cannot be an invasion. In any case the approach should be not to fields but to problems, in which whatever is true from any of our academically channelized areas of investigation is used.

This approach to common problems is somewhat better indicated in the articles on psychosomatic medicine in which doctor and analyst proceed parallelwise along the same road with friendly bows to one another. Here the difficulties are of a different nature. Since doctors and analysts cannot come together on a common acceptance of what is health, they are still preoccupied, in their different ways, with the removal of symptoms. Thus, English writes:

It behooves the psychoanalyst, the psychiatrist, the general practitioner and the specialist in fields other than psychiatry to join hands and work with one

another in helping sick people to learn that the most common-sense mind on the surface has hidden recesses in which childish bizarre ideas lie hidden in the matrix of emotion which can furnish the "toxin" for pain, discomfort and disability.

Following this, with the recognition that the basis of illness lies in "the instinctual demands clamouring for expression," English can only propose that doctors in medical schools should be made more aware of the problem; that psychoanalytic therapy should be more available to people with psychosomatic disorders; and that analysts should not be caught up in the tempo of the times in attempting to shorten treatment.

A third type of relationship to other fields warrants attention apropos of the article by Ernest Jones on the "Psychology of Religion." Restating the psychoanalytic approach to religion, Jones writes:

The attributes of omnipotence, omniscience, and moral perfection are invariably ascribed to the father at one stage or another during the young child's growth; they proceed at least as much from internal necessities as from any external example or suggestion. Various repressions to do with the idea of the father, together with his obvious shortcomings when judged by so absolute a standard, lead to the attributes of perfection being abstracted from him and incorporated in an intangible figure. This, in a couple of words, is perhaps the gist of the mass of knowledge we possess about the development of the idea of Godhead.

Analyzing this further, Jones presents the contradictory elements which make up contemporary religions. Seeing man as of a double nature, both life-affirming and life-negating, he sees man's creation, religion, also as both positive and cruel, and continuously in conflict within itself. After this analysis, however, he concludes with a little bow to the religionists:

To estimate the obviously enormous part that religion has played in organizing the capacity for sublimation on the part of mankind, and thus raising its cultural *niveau*, is a task for others to fulfill.

Thus, despite his understanding of the mechanisms by which religion was created, Jones values it and opens the way for the remarkable phenomenon we are witnessing at the present time, of increasing co-operation between the clergy and psychoanalysts.

Finally, what is the nature of the "powerful influence" of the psychoanalytic movement on the entire social structure? Who is not for freedom is against it, and we see psychoanalysis set to become the handmaiden of reaction. The unwillingness to risk social criticism is rationalized in a number of ways. For those who value "cultural achievements" the importance of sublimation is justified. For example, Ernst Kris points out:

Sublimation . . . describes the social aspect of the process of the discharge of energy: an instinctual drive which tends to a goal disapproved by society, and by the individual's superego, may be re-directed towards an approved goal. Artistic activity offers opportunities for sublimation of impulses of various kinds. . . . Clinical experience . . . confirms an impression shared by all who have studied art and artists: distance from immediate

gratification is a pre-condition of any aesthetic experience.

Many might challenge Kris' interpretation of "aesthetic experience" or his discussion of the precondition of "productive madness." It is significant that none of the discussions of the arts in this volume include music, or folk arts, or examine the neurotic character, or class character, of our aesthetic standards.

A second rationalization of a suppressive society is that offered by those who fear the chaos of unleashed destructive drives. Thus Schilder writes:

The wild instincts of one individual would endanger his fellow-beings, and their reaction to his aggressive and *untamed sexuality would make enjoyment of life utterly impossible* (italics the reviewer's).

The effect of these values and fears has not only made psychoanalysis available as a tool for suppressive measures, but has also impaired the development in psychoanalytic thought itself. We see a turning in on itself, a fear to reach out to new problems. Until psychoanalysis can re-examine its theoretical base, however, it cannot move on to the major problems of our time: the positive problems of health, that is, of non-pathological living functioning, with its non-compulsive expression in individual and group life, in work, and in love.

GLADYS MEYER.

EXCERPTS FROM
A. S. NEILL'S "THAT DREADFUL
SCHOOL" *

HISTORICAL

This is the story of a modern school, Summerhill, a school that is fairly well known and one that is pretty widely talked about. Every now and then I hear wonderful stories about it. The latest is that I had a child of seven whose main interest in life was water-closets. I decided to cure this child by drastic means, so I shut him up alone in a W.C. for twelve hours, during all of which he screamed and . . . was of course cured for ever. Then there are tales of myself—that I am a drunkard, a homosexual, a Communist, a red-haired rude Scot. Again there are tales of Summerhill's being a home for imbeciles . . . Less fatuous stories tell of a school where children break windows all day long . . . Newspaper reports call it a Go-as-you-please School, and imply that it is a gathering of wild primitives who know no law and have no manners.

It seems necessary, therefore, for me to write the story of the school as honestly as I can. That I write with a bias is natural, yet I shall try to show its demerits as well as its merits. And possibly I shall find that its demerits are only my own inner limitations transferred to my work. Its merits will be the merits of healthy, free children whose lives are unspoiled by fear and hate.

Summerhill began as an experimental school. It is no longer such; it is now a demonstration school, for it demonstrates that freedom works and succeeds. When my wife and I began it we had one main idea: to make the school fit the child instead of making the child fit the school. I had taught in ordinary schools for many years, and knew the other way well, knew

that it was all wrong. It was wrong because it was based on an adult conception of what a child should be and what he should learn. It dated—and dates—from the days when psychology was an unknown science. Obviously a school that makes active children sit at desks studying mostly useless subjects is a bad school when we consider the psychology of the child. It is a good school if we agree that it is desirable to have a population of docile, uncreative citizens who will fit into a civilization whose standard of success is riches and whose average of living is wage-slavery. The trouble is that while one stage of civilization passes, child nature continues. Our idea in founding the school was to find out what this child nature was.

There were—there are difficulties. We could only study children from the upper and middle classes, because our whole scheme depended on our being able to make ends meet . . . Sometimes it is difficult to see child nature when it is hidden behind too much money and too expensive clothes. When a girl knows that on her twenty-first birthday she will come into £500 a year it is not easy to study child nature in her. Luckily, however, most of the present and past pupils of Summerhill have not been spoiled by wealth; most of them know that they must earn a living when they leave school.

One drawback about the children of the middle-class is that they too are often given too much money . . . At our general meetings in school I have more than once advocated the pooling of all pocket-money, saying that it is manifestly unfair that one boy should get a pound a week while others get sixpence. In spite of the fact that the pupils with the big incomes are

* London: Herbert Jenkins Limited, 1937.

always in a very small minority I have never had my proposals carried by general vote. Children with fivepence a week will defend hotly any proposal to limit the income of their richer neighbors. And when one gets up and points out that Neill has a car while none of the staff can afford a car I know that I must be a bit of a humbug. Children have a very strong sense of justice, a fact that will be shown more fully when I describe their methods of dealing with social offenders.

I must explain that children who come to school early—say, at three or even eight, never show bourgeois tendencies; it is the spoilt child of fourteen from the conventional school that is the trouble.

At one time many of the children were problems: thieves, truants, etc. That came about because we were practically the only school that would deal with such cases. But gradually we began to have normal children, so that today among our seventy pupils the proportion of problems is, I should guess, the same as obtains in Eton or Roedean.

Well, we set out to make a school in which we should allow children freedom to be themselves. In order to do this we had to renounce all discipline, all direction, all suggestion, all moral training, all religious instruction. We have been called brave, but it did not require courage; all it required was what we had—a complete belief in the child as a good not an evil being. And during sixteen years this belief in the goodness of the child has never wavered; rather has it become a final faith.

Today, Summerhill pupils are mostly children whose parents want them to be brought up without restricting discipline from above. That is a most happy circumstance, for in the old days I would have the son of a fire-eating diehard, who sent his lad to me in desperation. Such parents had no interest in freedom for children at all, and secretly must have considered

us a crowd of lunatic cranks. It was so very difficult to explain things to those diehards.

I recall the military gentleman who thought of enrolling his nine year old son as a pupil.

"The place seems all right," he said, "but I have one fear . . . my boy may learn to masturbate here."

I asked him why he feared. "It will do him so much harm," he said.

"It didn't do you or me much harm, did it?" I said pleasantly.

He went off rather hurriedly with his son.

Then there was the rich mother who, after asking me questions for an hour, turned to her husband and said, "I can't decide whether to send Marjorie here or not."

"Don't bother," I said. "I have decided for you. I'm not taking her."

I had to explain to her what I meant. "You don't really believe in freedom," I said. "If Marjorie came here I should waste half my life explaining to you what it was all about, and in the end you wouldn't be convinced. The result would be disastrous for Marjorie, for she would be perpetually faced with the awful doubt: which is right, home or school?"

The ideal parents are those who come down and say: "Summerhill is the place for our kids; no other school will do." No other school will do because we have gone farther than any other school in freedom (with the possible exception of Dora Russell's school).

It is necessary even at this late date to explain what is meant by freedom for the child. The usual argument against freedom for children is of this kind: Life is hard, and we must train the children so that they will fit into life later on. We must therefore discipline them. If we allow them to do what they like how will they ever be able to serve under a boss? How will they compete with others who

have known discipline? I shall leave the answer till later: perhaps the book will be a sufficient answer.

Freedom is necessary for the child because only under freedom can he grow in his natural way. I see the results of bondage in new pupils coming from prep. schools and convents. They are bundles of insincerity, with an unreal politeness and pseudo-manners. Their reaction to freedom is rapid and tiresome. For the first week or two they open doors for the staff, call me "Sir," wash carefully. They glance at me with "respect" which is easily recognized as fear. After a few weeks of freedom they show what they are. They become impudent, unmannerly, unwashed. They do all the things they have been forbidden to do in the past: they swear and smoke and break things. And all the time they have an insincere expression in their eyes and in their voices. It takes at least six months for them to lose their insincerity. They lose also their deference to what they think is authority, and in six months they are natural, healthy kids who say what they think without cheek or hate.

When a child comes young enough to freedom he does not go through the stage of insincerity and acting. The most striking thing about Summerhill is the absolute sincerity among the pupils . . . but I grant that it has its awkward moments, as when recently a girl of three looked at a bearded visitor and said, "I don't think I like your face." The visitor rose to the occasion. "But I like yours," he said, and Mary smiled.

No, I won't argue for freedom for children. One-half hour with a free child is more convincing than a book of arguments. Seeing is believing. Yet it is necessary to point out the difference between freedom and licence. The other day I sat with Ethel Mannin in Covent Garden. During the first ballet a child in front of us talked loudly to her father. At the end

of the ballet Ethel and I found other seats. Said Ethel to me: "What would you do if one of your kids from Summerhill did that?"

"Tell it to shut up," I said. "You wouldn't need to," said Ethel; "they wouldn't do it."

And I don't think they would. I forget whether in any previous book I told of the woman who brought her girl of seven to see me. "Mr. Neill," she said, "I have read every line you have written, and even before Daphne was born I had decided to bring her up exactly on your lines." I glanced at Daphne who was standing on my grand piano with her heavy shoes on. She made a leap for the sofa and nearly went through the springs. "You see how natural she is," said the mother, "the Neillian child."

I fear that I blushed. It is the distinction between freedom and licence that many parents cannot grasp. In the disciplined home the children have no rights, and in the spoiled home they have all the rights. The proper home is one in which children and adults have equal rights. No one is allowed to walk on my grand piano, and I am not allowed to borrow a boy's cycle without his permission. At a general meeting the vote of a child of six counts for as much as my vote does.

But, says the knowing one, in practice of course the voices of the grown-ups count. Doesn't the child of six wait to see how you vote before he raises his hand? I wish he sometimes would, for many of my proposals are lost. Free children are not easily influenced. The absence of fear accounts for this phenomenon, and the absence of fear is the finest thing that can happen to a child's life. They do not fear our staff. One of the school rules is that after ten o'clock there shall be quietness on the upper corridor. One night about eleven a pillow fight was going on, and I left my desk where I was writing to protest against the row. As I got upstairs

there was a scurrying of feet and the corridor was empty and quiet.

Suddenly I heard a disappointed voice say: "Humph, it's only Neill," and the fun at once began again. When I explained that I was trying to write a book downstairs they at once agreed to chuck the noise. Their scurrying came from the suspicion that their bedtime officer (one of their own age) was on their track.

I emphasize the importance of this absence of fear of adults. A child of nine will come and tell me he has broken a window with a ball. There was a time not so long ago when the government resigned, and no one would stand for election. I seized the opportunity of putting up a notice: In the absence of a government I herewith declare myself Dictator. Heil Neill! Soon there were mutterings, and in the afternoon Vivien, aged six, came to me and said: "Neill, I've broken a window in the gym." I waved him away. "Don't bother me with little things like that," I said, and he went.

A little later he came back and said he had broken two windows. By this time I was curious and asked him what the great idea was. "I don't like Dictators," he said, "and I don't like going without my grub." (I discovered later that the opposition to dictatorship had tried to take it out of the cook, who promptly shut up the kitchen and went home.)

"Well," I asked, "what are you going to do about it?"

"Break more windows," he said doggedly.

"Carry on," I said, and he carried on. When he returned he announced that he had broken seventeen windows.

"But mind," he said earnestly, "I'm going to pay for them."

"How?"

"Out of my pocket money. How long will it take me?"

I did a rapid calculation. "About ten years," I said.

He looked glum for a minute, then I saw his face light up. "Gee," he cried, "I don't have to pay for them at all."

"But what about the Private Property rule?" I asked. "The windows are my private property."

"I know that, but there isn't any Private Property rule now. There isn't any government and the government makes the rules."

It may have been my expression that made him add: "But all the same I'll pay for them." In lecturing in London shortly afterwards I told the story, and at the end of my talk a young man came up and handed me a pound note "to pay for the young devil's windows." That is two years ago, but even now Vivien tells people of his windows and of the man who paid for them: "He must have been a terrible fool, because he never even saw me."

Most lying on the part of children is prompted by fear, and when fear is absent lying diminishes. I do not say it disappears entirely. A boy will tell you he has broken a window but he will not tell you he has raided the larder or pinched his neighbor's cycle valve. The complete absence of lying would be too much to hope for. I am a pretty good liar myself on occasion, and so are you, reader. I am writing this book on a ship on my way to lecture in South Africa, and I fear I have used—or rather abused—this trip generously these last few weeks . . . "Dear Sir, I regret that I cannot answer your letter in full because I am sailing for South Africa tomorrow," and what a great opportunity when I return! . . . "Dear Sir, I cannot trace your letter. It must have gone astray when I was in South Africa."

Freedom will not do away with the phantasy lie in children. Too often parents make a mountain out of this agreeable moleheap. When little Jimmy came to me saying that his Daddy had sent him a real Rolls Bentley I said to him: "I

know. I saw it at the front door. Topping car."

"Go on," he said, "I was only kidding."

Now it may seem paradoxical and illogical, but I make a distinction between lying and being dishonest. You can be honest and yet a liar, that is, you can be honest about the big things in life although sometimes dishonest about the lesser things. Thus many of our lies are meant to save others pain. Truth-telling would become an evil if it impelled me to write: "Dear Sir, your letter was so long and dull that I could not be bothered reading it all," or if it forced you to say: "Thank you for playing, but you murdered that Etude." Adult lying is altruistic (not always), but child lying is always local and personal. The best way to make a child a liar for life is to teach it to speak the truth and nothing but the truth.

Speaking a lie is a minor frailty. Living a lie is a major calamity. The children brought up under discipline live one long life lie. They never dare be themselves. They become slaves to established futile customs and manners, and they accept without question their silly little silk hats and Eton jackets, their "crocodiles" and their black stockings and straw hats. The Old School Tie symbolizes all that discipline stands for. The headmaster of a large boys' school said to me not long ago when I asked him what sort of boys he had: "The sort that goes out with neither ideals nor ideas. They would join up as cannon fodder in any war, never stopping to consider what the war was about and why they were fighting." That hints at the benefits of discipline to the ruling classes, doesn't it?

This business of being sincere in life and to life is a vital one. It is the most vital one in the world really . . . Possibly the greatest discovery we have made in Summerhill is that a child is born a sincere creature. We set out to leave children

alone so that we might discover what they were. It is the only possible way of dealing with children, and the pioneer school of the future must pursue this way if it is to contribute to child knowledge and, more important, to child happiness. The aim of life is happiness. The evil of life is all that limits or destroys happiness. Summerhill is possibly the happiest school in the world. We have no truants and seldom a case of homesickness. We have no fights—quarrels, of course, but seldom have I seen a stand-up fight like the ones we used to have as boys. I seldom hear a child cry, and that is because children when free have much less hate to express than children who are down-trodden. Hate breeds hate, and love breeds love. Love means being on the side of approving, and that is essential in any school. You can't be "on the side of" if you punish and storm and rage. Summerhill is a school in which the child knows that he is approved of. Mind you, I make no claim that we are above and beyond human foibles. I spent weeks planting potatoes in Spring, and when I found eight plants pulled up in June I made a big fuss. Yet there was a difference between my fuss and that of an authoritarian. My fuss was about potatoes, but the fuss a disciplinarian would make would drag in the question of morality—right or wrong. I did not say that it was wrong to steal my spuds; I did not make it a matter of good and evil; I made it a matter of spuds. They were my spuds and they should have been left alone. I doubt if I am making the distinction clear. Let me put it in another way. To the children I am no authority to be feared. I am their equal, and the row I kick up about my spuds has no more significance to them than the row a boy may kick up about his punctured bicycle. It is quite safe to have a row with a child, when you are equals. Now some will say: "That's all bunk. There can't be equality. Neill is the boss;

he is bigger and wiser." That is indeed true. I am the boss, and if the house went on fire the children would run to me. They know that I am bigger and wiser (am I?), but that does not matter when I meet them on their own ground—the potato patch, so to speak. When Billy, aged five, told me to get out of his birthday party because I hadn't been invited, I went at once without hesitation, just as Billy gets out of my room when I don't want his company. It is not easy to describe this relationship between teacher and child, but every visitor to Summerhill will know what I mean when I say that the relationship is ideal. One sees it in the attitudes to the staff in general. Corkhill the Chemistry man is "Corks" or "George." Other members of the staff are known as May and Cyril and Lucy and Ruth. Strangely enough the only person they have kept a title for is my wife, who is "Mrs. Lins" (Lindesay-Neill). I am "Neill," and the cook is "Maisie."

Visitors tell me that they find the children unusually friendly. They may be just as friendly at other schools, yet I recall the time when I was Joint Editor (with Beatrice Ensor) of *The New Era* round about 1919. Part of my work was to visit progressive schools, and I remember the difficulty I had in making contact with the children. They were standoffish, rather like the people on this ship who are just beginning to thaw on the seventh day out. The only children who accepted me at once were the boys in Norman MacMunn's school then at Tiptree Hall. That may have been because Norman did all his teaching with a cigarette in his mouth. Today Summerhill is possibly the only school in Britain where the teachers can smoke while they teach.

Children make contact with strangers more easily when fear is unknown to them. English reserve is at bottom fear, and that is why the most reserved are those who have the most wealth. If I had

traveled Third on this ship I should have found the people much more friendly, but as a bad sailor I chose First, and as a good Scot I chose First—paid by the Transvaal Teachers' Association. If you really want to know the difference between the reserve due to class and the unreserve due to having no class, visit Harrow one day and an L.C.C. East End school the next. The fact that Summerhill children are as friendly as East Ham children is a source of pride to me and my staff.

It must be confessed, however, that many of our visitors are people of interest to the children. The kind of visitor most unwelcome to them is the teacher, especially the earnest teacher, who wants to see their drawing and written work. The most welcome visitor is he or she who has good tales to tell—of adventure and travel or, best of all, of aviation. A boxer or a good tennis player is surrounded at once, but visitors of theory, be it Communism or Oxford Groupism, are left severely alone.

It is worth mentioning that a free education does not produce Communists and rebels generally. It may be due to the class of pupils—they have never had to experience slavery or poverty—but more likely it is, due to child nature itself. Childhood is playhood, and the play period lives longer than is generally supposed. Interest in politics is an adult interest. It comes to this that children live for the day. Tomorrow is too far away to be of importance to them. That is why time is long in childhood. When you are ten, a year is a long, long time, but when you are fifty the years pass at an alarming speed.

This playhood business has worried me a lot. I find it impossible to get youths of seventeen to help me plant potatoes or weed onions. They will spend hours decoking motor engines or washing cars or making radio sets, but anything to do

with weeding or shovelling sand is far away from their interest. It took me a long time to accept this phenomenon. "The lazy louts—when I was their age, etc. . . ." The truth began to dawn on me when one day I was digging my brother's garden in Scotland. I didn't enjoy the job, and it came to me suddenly that what was wrong was that I was digging a garden that meant nothing to me. And my garden means nothing to boys, whereas their motor bikes mean a lot. True altruism is a long time in coming, and it never loses its factor of selfishness.

Small children have quite a different attitude to work. Summerhill juniors, from three to eight, will work like Trojans mixing cement or carting sand or cleaning bricks, and work with no thought of reward. They identify themselves with grown-ups and their work is a play phantasy worked out in reality. From the age of eight or nine until nineteen or twenty the desire to do manual labor of a dull kind seems to be wanting. I speak of the masses; individuals remain workers right through this fallow period.

Small children live a life of phantasy, but they carry it over into action. The phantasy life persists in adolescence, but action is less common. Boys of eight to fourteen certainly carry their phantasies into action, for if they aren't playing gangsters and bumping people off they are flying all the skies in their wooden aeroplanes. From fourteen onwards the fallow period is most apparent, both in boys and girls. Small girls go through a gangster age also, but it does not take the form of guns and swords. It is more personal. Mary's gang objects to Nellie's gang, and there are rows and hard words. Boys' rival gangs are play enemies, while girls' gangs are more apt to be real enemies. This makes small boys more easy to live with than small girls. The boys are primarily interested in things, the girls in people. On a good day you may not see

the boy gangsters of Summerhill. They are in far corners intent on their deeds of derring do. But you will see the girls. They are in or near the house, and never far away from the grown-ups. But you will often find the art room full of girls painting and making bright things with fabrics. In the main I think that the small boys are more creative, at least I never hear a boy say he is bored because he doesn't know what to do, whereas I sometimes hear girls say it.

I possibly find the boys more creative than the girls because the school may be better equipped for boys than for girls. Girls of ten and over have little use for a workshop with iron and wood; they have no desire to tinker with motorcycle engines, nor are they attracted by electricity or radio. They have their art work, which includes pottery, linoleum cutting, painting, sewing work, but that is not enough. They need a better cooking outfit than they have (although boys are just as keen on cooking as girls are). The girls need—now, really, what do they need? As a mere man I don't know. I see them writing and producing their own plays, making their own dresses and scenery . . . Branwyn, aged nine, produces excellent ballets, and the acting talent of the girls is of a high standard. The girls appear to frequent the chemistry lab. just as often as the boys do, and when I come to think of it, the workshop is about the only department that does not attract girls from nine upwards. The girls take a less active part in school meetings than the boys do, and I have no ready explanation to give for this fact. A girl is usually more sensitive than a boy. She is easily squashed by ridicule or sarcasm. Girls are just as keen on general meetings as boys are, but, as I say, they take a less active part. The inferiority complex takes a different form in boys and girls. The girl retires behind her inferiority, while the boy overcompensates for his inferi-

ority by making a brave show of not caring. Thus at a meeting, when Jean is howled at she is likely to retire into her shell, whereas Dave will shout louder than his opponents, and in the end surmount his defeat. Humor comes into it. Girls have as much sense of humor as boys, but they seldom use humor to protect themselves as boys do. Some boys defend themselves in this way with success. I have seen Dave being tried for some anti-social act, but by giving his evidence in a hilarious way, he gets the appreciation of the mob, and succeeds in getting only a minor punishment. A girl never does this; she is ever too ready to see herself in the wrong. Even in the most enlightened homes the girls suffer from the general inferiority that our society forces on womanhood. In a capitalist world women are possessions, and the fact that most married women are economically dependent on their husbands must make all women feel inferior. The girls from Summerhill will, most of them, have jobs which they will carry on after marriage, so that their inferiority is not a personal one so much as a general one.

The usual criticism of co-education is that boys and girls have different capacities for learning. This criticism does not apply to Summerhill where learning is not a fetish, where indeed learning is optional. This subject of learning is important enough to have a new chapter for itself.

THE LEARNING SIDE

Lessons in Summerhill are optional. Children can go to them or stay away from them—for years if they want to. There is a time-table for the staff, and the children have classes according to their age usually, but sometimes according to their interests. Personally I do not know what type of teaching is carried on, for I never visit lessons, and have no interest in how children learn. We have no new

methods of teaching because we do not consider that teaching very much matters.

Children who come as infants attend lessons all the way, but pupils from other schools vow that they will never attend any beastly lessons again. They play and cycle and get in people's way, but they fight shy of any lessons. This sometimes goes on for months, and the recovery time is proportionate to the hatred their last school gave them. Our record case was a girl from a convent. She loafed for three years. The average period of recovery from lesson-aversion is three months.

Strangers to the idea of freedom in the school will be wondering what sort of a madhouse it is where teachers smoke while they teach and children play all day if they want to. Many an adult says: "If I had been sent to a school like that I'd never have done a thing." Others say: "Such children will feel themselves heavily handicapped when they have to compete against children who have been made to learn." I think of Jack who left us at the age of seventeen to go into an engineering factory. One day the managing director sent for him.

"You are the lad from Summerhill," he said. "I'm curious to know how such an education appears to you now that you are mixing with lads from the old schools. Suppose you had to choose again, would you go to Eton or Summerhill?"

"Oh, Summerhill, of course," replied Jack.

"But why? What does it offer that the Public Schools don't offer?"

Jack scratched his head. "I dunno," he said slowly; "I think it gives you a feeling of complete self-confidence."

"Yes," said the manager dryly, "I noticed it when you came into the room."

"Lord," laughed Jack, "I'm sorry if I gave you that impression."

"I liked it," said the director. "Most men when I call them into the office fidget

about and look uncomfortable. You came in as my equal. By the way, what department would you like to change into?"

This story shows that learning does not matter, that only character matters. Jack failed in his Matric. because he hated all book learning, but his lack of knowledge about Lamb's *Essays* or the Trigonometrical Solution of Triangles is not going to handicap him in life.

All the same there is a lot of learning in Summerhill. I don't suppose a group of our twelve year olds could compete with a State school class of equal age in, say, neat handwriting or spelling or vulgar fractions. But in an examination requiring originality our lot would beat the others hollow. We have no class examinations in the school, but sometimes I set an exam for fun. In my last paper appeared the following questions:

Where are the following: Madrid, Thursday Island, yesterday, God, love, my pocket screwdriver (but, alas, there was no helpful answer to this one), democracy, hate, etc.

Give meanings for the following—the number shows how many are expected for each—: Hand (3) . . . only two got the third right—the standard of measure for a horse. Bore (3) . . . club bore, oil well bore, river bore. Shell (3) . . . seaside, "That was Shell that was," undertaker's word for coffin. Brass (4) . . . metal, cheek, money, department of an orchestra . . . "The stuff that Neill is stingy with in his workshop" was allowed double marks as metal and cheek.

Translate Hamlet's To be or Not to be speech into Summerhillese.

These questions are obviously not intended to be serious, and the children enjoy them thoroughly. New-comers, on the whole, do not rise to the answering standard of pupils who have become acclimatized to the school, not that they have less brain power, rather because they have become so accustomed to work in a

serious groove that any light touch puzzles them.

This is the play side of our teaching. In all classes much work is done, and if for some reason or another a teacher cannot take his or her class on the appointed time there is usually trouble. David, aged nine, had to be isolated the other day for whooping cough. He cried bitterly.

"I'll miss Roger's lesson in Geography," he protested furiously. David had been in the school practically from birth, and he has definite and final ideas about the necessity of having his lessons given to him. A few years ago someone at a meeting proposed that a culprit should be punished by being banished from lessons for a week. The others protested on the ground that the punishment was too severe.

My staff and I have a hearty hatred of all examinations, and to us the Matric. is anathema. But we cannot refuse to teach children their Matric. subjects. Obviously as long as the thing is in existence it is our master. Hence Summerhill staff is always qualified to teach to the Matric. standard. Not that many children want to take Matric.; only those going to the university do so. I do not think they find it especially hard to tackle this exam. They generally begin to work for it seriously at the age of fourteen, and they do the work in about three years. I don't claim that they always pass at first go. The more important fact is that they try again.

Boys who are going in for engineering do not bother to take Matric. They go straight to training centres of the Faraday House type. They have a tendency to see the world before they settle down to business or university work. The story of Derrick Boyd may become typical of the adventurous spirit that free education encourages. He came at the age of eight and left after passing his Matric. at eighteen. He wanted to be a doctor, but his father

could not at the time afford to send him to the university. Derrick thought that he would fill in the waiting time by seeing the world. He went to London docks and spent two days trying to get any job—even as a stoker. He was told that too many real sailors were unemployed, and he went home sadly. Soon a fellow-school-mate (of Summerhill) told him of an English lady in Spain who wanted a chauffeur. Derrick seized the chance, went out to Spain, built the lady a house or enlarged her existing house, drove her all over Europe, and then went to the university. The lady decided to help him with his university fees and living. After two years the lady asked him to take a year off to motor her to Kenya and there build her a house. He is there now, and the latest news is that he is to finish his medical studies in Capetown.

Larry, who came to us about the age of twelve, passed Matric. at sixteen and went out to Tahiti to grow fruit. Finding this an unpaying spec. he took to driving a taxi. Later he passed on to New Zealand, where I understand he did all sorts of jobs, including driving another taxi. He passed on to Brisbane University, and three weeks ago I had a visit from the Principal of that university, who gave an admiring account of Larry's doings. "When we had a vacation and the students went home," he said, "Larry went out to work as a laborer on a sawmill."

But I promised to be as honest as I could, and I must confess that there are Old Boys who have not shown enterprise. For obvious reasons I cannot describe them, but our successes are always those whose homes are good. Derrick and Jack and Larry had parents who were completely in sympathy with the school, so that the boys never had that most tiresome of conflicts, the thought: Which is right, home or school? And looking at the children we have today I am convinced that the successes will be those whose parents

are in agreement with us—when the child comes young enough.

Home and school must be a unity. Mental conflict will handicap a child for life. I think of one unsuccessful, a boy whose parents were religious and moral. At school that boy could never settle the doubt about school vs. home, and he went out to face life with this doubt held ready to attach to every decision in life. The boy may have had natural ability, but he never showed it, he was so much inhibited. Other comparative failures have been children who have been pushed on by their parents. In such cases the child becomes resentful, and unconsciously is determined that his parents will not win.

I suddenly see a brilliant opportunity for critics. Ah, this man claims the success for his school when they succeed, and when they are duds he blames the parents! It is not quite true, for as I have said the success is the product of home and school combined. What is true is that only the child without fears and conflict will meet life in the spirit of adventure, and if a home gives fears and conflicts it is a bad home.

In connection with the bad home I shall digress a little on to the question of homesickness. Homesickness is always the sign of a bad home, a home in which there is a lot of hate. The homesick child longs, not for the love of home, but for the strife of home, and for the protection of home. That sounds paradoxical, but it isn't when we reflect that the more unhappy the home is the more the child seeks protection. He has no anchor in life, and he exaggerates the anchorage he calls home. Absent from it he idealizes it and longs, not for the home he knows, but for the home it has been to him in his wishes.

To return to learning, parents are slow in realizing how unimportant the learning side of school is. Children, like adults, learn what they want to learn in life, but all the prize-giving and marks and

exams sidetrack the personality. Only pedants can claim that learning from books is education. Books are the least important apparatus in a school. All that any child needs is the Three R's; the rest should be tools and clay and sports and theatres and paints—and freedom.

The question arises: Do girls really flourish under a system of freedom as easily as boys do? Do the girls show desires to see the world as stokers or taxi-drivers? So far we have had only two girls who came as infants and left as true products of Summerhill. One is a B.A. (Psychologist) and the other is a chemist. Whether it be that life holds less adventure for women than for men, our girls on the whole do not go off on wild schemes. We are still at a stage when life holds more for men than for women. The economic market for women is not a wide one. Dull jobs there are, of course, jobs in offices and shops. Economic necessity may send our girls into dull jobs, but they are more likely to go in for the stage or art or medicine. At the moment two old girls are at art schools in London, but today there is no living in art except the commercial kind—advertising and general poster work. I know of men well known in the poster world, who cannot live by their art.

Summerhill has had comparatively few girls who made, as it were, the whole

course. This is not easy to account for. Up to a few years ago girls were apt to come late to school; we had lots of failures from convents and girls' schools, and we have never accepted a child who came late as a true example of a free education. These girls who came late were usually children of parents who had no appreciation of freedom (if they had had their girls would not have been problems), and when the girl was cured of her special failing she was whisked off to "a nice school where she will be educated." But for the past six or seven years we have been getting girls from homes which believed in Summerhill, and a fine bunch they are too, full of beans and originality and initiative.

We have lost girls occasionally for financial reasons, sometimes when their brothers were kept on at expensive schools. The old tradition of making the sons the important ones in the family dies hard. We have also lost both girls and boys through the possessive jealousy of the parents, who fear that the children should give their home love to their school.

But this chapter is one on learning. I have drifted away from the subject because it means so little to me. The most hopeful thing about the parents now is that they never ask me what Johnnie is learning. They do not have to ask how Johnnie is. They see—and hear.

EDITOR'S NOTE: *In the last issue, we had to leave out a section of the Excerpts from A. S. Neill's "THE PROBLEM TEACHER" for reasons of space. This section follows here:*

THE TEACHER AND EXAMINATIONS

Exams are a test of knowledge, and if one holds that knowledge is not the most salient feature in school, one is handicapped in treating the topic of examinations. Problem teachers magnify the importance of examinations, and the worst

kind of teacher is he who boasts of his successes in the examination room.

Examinations are the means by which age controls youth. Every boy or girl who sits Matric is conforming to the laws of the old, because without conformation the door is shut to many a career. Because this

exam is the bugbear of education let us consider it. The candidate must pass in five subjects, and pass them all at one sitting. That of course is a cruel and inhuman rule, for there is no rhyme or reason why a lad who fails in Maths should have to sit four other subjects when he tries again months later. The candidate has a choice of subjects within certain limits, and certain subjects are compulsory. English is one, so that a youth who is mathematical and whose only interest is in electricity has to study Lamb's Essays and a Shakespeare play before he is allowed to enter his life's subject.

The question arises: How are we to select our students for the universities if we abolish the Matric and the School Leavings? And if we do abolish it, how about the man who wants to be a doctor? Are we to let him loose on society without testing his capabilities and knowledge in any way? Awkward questions to answer.

Under a system that crowds students into large classes the examination way is possibly the only practical one. But if students could work always with their professors in small groups the examination might well give place to a system wherein the professor's estimate of the student would be the equivalent of the exam. In business we do not set exams: a man is promoted when he shows that he knows his subject, and the chief of a factory does not need to examine a youth when he promotes him from the lathe to the designing room. The chief objection to any such system would be that a professor might allow personal factors to warp his judgment, and might be unjust to the youth he did not like. One way out of this difficulty would be to have a freedom to change from one teacher to another.

This system is used in schools but not wholly. In the Leaving Certificate the teacher's estimation of a pupil is taken into account, and that is a real advance in meas-

uring educational ability (within the narrow limits allowed to ability).

But what about Matric? I should abolish it lock, stock, and barrel. Failing that I should make it an oral conversation between examiner and candidate. In all humility I should take on the task of telling in ten minutes' conversation whether a youth is capable of taking a university degree or not.

Exams very often have a bad effect on children. The dull child acquires an inferiority that life will find it difficult to rid him of, while the bright child may get a bee in his bonnet about his prowess. In the larger life outside the school we are not judged by the percentage of marks we make.

Since exams are not likely to be abolished for a long time, I have a practical proposition to make. It is this: that every teacher be compelled to sit Matric every time his students go forward for that exam. That would give them a fresh, if fearful, orientation to the examination system. Personally I could not pass Matric. I might scrape through in English, Maths, and German, but could not possibly pass in any other subjects. How salutary it would be for the children of a secondary school to learn that their Maths master had failed in four subjects . . . including Maths!

Teachers should realize that success in life has little or nothing to do with trumpery little examinations. With the exception of university professors there is hardly a man of merit who has attained his eminence by passing exams. The great writers, the artists, the composers, the statesmen, the actors, the teachers . . . their success is due to factors that no examination can touch. Examinations may be useful in the selection of the second-best in life, but that is about all they can do.

The examination has a deep motive behind it: it concentrates the interest of the dispossessed classes on the minor successes

of life: it dresses up the pedagogical goose in the feathers of a swan. It distracts the attention of the people from things that matter. It is the gilt medal that royalty, in its munificence, bestows on the humble subject for loyalty: it is the gewgaw that the imperialist hands out to the ignorant savage, who values a glass bead higher than his pearls and gold. Examinations play a part in the keeping of the people down, for they form a link in the chain of snobbery that binds the lower orders so tightly.

They have too a religious significance, a moral element. The great and final examination takes place at the Judgment Seat, and the examination dream usually betrays a fear of death and punishment . . . I have found more than once in analyzing young students that the passing of an exam was linked up with the desire to overcome the habit of masturbation. This is an alarming discovery: it makes the exam ideal not only futile but soul-destroying and guilt-forming. I am convinced that, behind the rational idea that the exam selects the clever, is the unconscious moral idea that the exam separates the sheep from the goats. Children have the uncanny ability to ignore the rational and feel the irrational, and no child who has been taught to fear God can sit an exam without unconscious fears being aroused. We read sometimes of students who are so depressed after failing in an exam that they commit suicide. In such cases the exam itself is only the Serajevo shot that started the Great War: the suicide is the result of the moral failure that the failure in the examination symbolized. The self-destruction is punishment for sexual failure, or rather failure to overcome sex temptation.

That brings me to my final criticism of examinations. They concentrate on what is in the head, and the million times more important question of what is in the heart is ignored. They deal with the minor conscious, and sidetrack the major unconscious. This aspect requires a chapter to itself.

So long as ours is a class society I cannot see how the teacher is to rise above class. So long as Lady Bountiful lives in the manor, I cannot see how the village schoolmaster is to have a proper self respect. One of my painful memories is that of an interview with the local squireess who complained because a boy had not touched his cap to her. I tried to explain to her that I was astounded, because I had taught the boys to lift their caps to her and to the woman who did the school charring.

In a definite manner you are preparing the children for this outside standard of living; by making schooling competitive with marks and prizes and examinations, you are preparing the child for the destructive competitiveness of capitalism, where it is a case of *deil tak the henmost*.

I have suggested earlier in this book the reason why this is so, the reason that the schools are made to subserve the motives of the ruling class. Naturally the ruling class has no intention of changing this system which produces servants and sycophants. But the teaching profession could change it if it were a united profession, conscious of its position and its exploitation, conscious that it was doing the dirty work of its masters. It could change it if the young men and women of the profession refused to allow it to be ruled by the old men, refused to elect only elders to the executive posts in the National Union of Teachers.

THE DISCOVERY OF THE ORGONE

VOL. 1

THE FUNCTION OF THE ORGASM

SEX-ECONOMIC PROBLEMS OF BIOLOGICAL ENERGY

By WILHELM REICH

Price, \$3.00

xxxvi + 368 pages

CHARACTER-ANALYSIS

PRINCIPLES AND TECHNIQUE. FOR PSYCHOANALYSTS IN
PRACTICE AND IN TRAINING

Second Edition

By WILHELM REICH

Price, \$4.50

xxii + 328 pages

ORGONE INSTITUTE PRESS

157 CHRISTOPHER STREET

New York 14, N. Y.

P. O. BOX 153
RANGELEY, MAINE

1/10

THE SEXUAL REVOLUTION

TOWARD A SELF-GOVERNING CHARACTER STRUCTURE

By WILHELM REICH

Price, \$3.25

xxvii + 273 pages

THE MASS PSYCHOLOGY OF FASCISM

THIRD, REVISED AND ENLARGED EDITION

By WILHELM REICH

Price, \$4.50

xxiv + 344 pages

ORGONE INSTITUTE PRESS

157 CHRISTOPHER STREET

New York 14, N. Y.

P. O. BOX 153
RANGELEY, MAINE